

Nathanaell Oliver. 1744

Fundamenta Grammatices:
OR, THE
FOUNDATION
OF THE
Latin Tongue
In TWO PARTS.

The FIRST,

Being an Explanation of the Eight Parts of Speech; with a most easy Method for the declining of Nouns, terminating the Declensions, comparing of Adjectives, conjugating of Verbs, &c.

The SECOND,

Being a Methodical Examination and Explanation of *Propria quæ Maribus, Quæ Genus*, and *As in Præsentî*, both fitted to the meanest Capacity; with the meaning of all the necessary Rules in the *Syntaxis*, with the particular Examples of each Rule applied; with a *Dictionariolum* or Index thereunto annexed, for the more ready Use, Benefit, and Ease of all those that desire to be instructed in the LATIN TONGUE.

By NICHOLAS FARMBOROW,

Schoolmaster of Watford.

The Seventh Edition.

Revis'd by N. BAILEY.

L O N D O N :

Printed for J. BROTHERTON, J. HAZARD,
W. MEADOWS, T. COX, W. HINCHCLIFFE,
T. ASTLEY, S. AUSTEN, and R. WILLOCK.

M DCC XXXI,

Edue T 20 917.31.6

~~5252.22~~

~~educt 917.31~~

Rec^d Oct. 22, 1845-

Gift of Isaac Mansfield
of Boston

N. Oliver Junr.

434

THE
EPISTLE,

To all Schoolmasters and Instructors
of Children in the first Rudiments
of Grammar.

GENTLEMEN,

I*F in this as well as the first Edition, I shall
be serviceable for the imbuing the Minds of
Children with those Notions, that are ne-
cessary Qualifications to a more easy and ready
attaining the Fundamental Parts of Grammar,
(without which there can be no Decorum or
Symmetry in the Superstructure) I have ob-
tained my Desire. Now I cannot but expect that
this, as well as all other Books, should under-
go the common Fate, which is, Laudabitur
ab his culpabitur ab illis, some commending,
whilst others are criticising with an Operam
& oleum perdidit, and look upon it as use-
less, and condemn both it and the Author too,
with a Malum est non fecisse bonum, either
because it is below their sublime Notions, (not in
the mean time considering for what Capacities
it was composed) or because they carp at every
thing that's not of their own Stamp, tho' they*

A 2

know

THE EPISTLE.

know not how to compose a better. Now for the satisfaction of those and myself too, I have to this Impression affixed my Name, desiring those that are not satisfied, to be so generously candid, as to give me some Friendly Advertisements in a private Epistle, and to be so ingenuous with me, as to let me know, wherein I have been either deficient or redundant; and I do sincerely promise, upon due Consideration, to acknowledge my Error, and be thankful for such a Friendly Admonition and amend. In the meanwhile if thou wilt be so candid, as to present us with something more useful in this kind, I do promise to make use of it and lay aside mine own; till which time I must crave leave to recommend it as the most useful Book extant in its kind, and the most plain and familiar Explication of Mr. Lilly's Grammar. I shall say no more, but what the Poet said in another case,

—— Si quid novisti rectius istis,
Candidus imperti; si non, his utere mecum.
Hor.

And that I am,

Your Brother,
and Servant,

Watford,
May 12, 1690.

Nicholas Farmborough.

T H E

T H E

Eight Parts of Speech

E X P L A I N E D.

Q. **W** H A T is the beginning of Speech?
 A. Letters.

Q. What do Letters make?
 A. Syllables.

Q. What do Syllables make?

A. Words.

Q. What do Words make?

A. Sentences.

Q. How many Parts are there in Speech?

A. Eight: Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle, Adverb, Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection.

Q. How many-fold are the Eight Parts of Speech?

A. Two-fold, Declined and Undeclared.

Q. How many are Declined?

A. Four; Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle.

Q. How many are Undeclared?

A. Four; Adverb, Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection.

Q. What mean you by this word Declined?

A. By Declined, I mean the changing of a word into divers Endings, as from one Case, Number, Mood, Tense, or Person, to another; as *Musa*, *Musæ*; and *Amo*, *Amas*, *Amavi*, &c.

Q. What mean you by this word Undeclared?

A. By this word Undeclared, I mean all such words that cannot be changed from one Ending or Termination to another; as *Hodie* to day, *Ad* to, *Et* and, &c.

Q. Are these four Parts of Speech (which you say are Declined) declined after the same manner.

A. No; for some are declined with Mood and Tense, and some with Case and Gender.

Q. How many are declined with Mood and Tense?

A. Only one, and that is a Verb.

Q. How many are declined with Case and Gender?

A. Three; Noun, Pronoun, and Participle.

Of a Noun.

Q. WHAT is a Noun?

A. A Noun is the name of a thing which may be either seen, felt, heard, or understood.

Q. Give an Example?

A. As *Manus* a Hand, *Domus* an House.

Q. How do you know that the word *Manus* an Hand is a Noun?

A. Because it may be seen.

Q. Is *Thunder* a Noun or not?

A. Yes, because it may be heard.

Q. How many kinds of Nouns are there?

A. Two; A Noun Substantive and a Noun Adjective.

Q. What is the difference between a Noun Substantive and a Noun Adjective?

A. A Noun Substantive standeth by itself (that is, requireth not another word to be joined with it to shew its signification); a Noun Adjective cannot (that is, cannot shew its signification without another word joined with it). A Noun Substantive is declined with one Article, or with two at the most; A Noun Adjective is declined with three Articles, or with three Terminations. Any thing that you can put [*a*] or [*the*] before, and make sense of it, is a Noun Substantive; any thing that you may join *Person* or *Thing* to, is a Noun Adjective; a Noun Adjective may be compared commonly, a Noun Substantive cannot, or very seldom.

Q. Is a *Man* a Noun Substantive, or a Noun Adjective?

A. A

A. A Noun Substantive; because you may put [*a*] or [*the*] before it, and understand its signification without joining any thing to it.

Q. *Is the word [Happy] a Noun Substantive or not?*

A. No, it is a Noun Adjective, because its signification cannot be understood, without joining person or thing to it.

Q. *Explain it by an Example?*

A. When I say *happy*, without any other word joined to it, its signification cannot be understood; but when — *an happy Man*, or the like, its signification may be understood; whereby I know that the word — *happy*, is a Noun Adjective; by which reason the knowledge of a Noun Substantive and a Noun Adjective is found out.

Q. *How many sorts of Noun Substantives are there?*

A. Two; A Noun Substantive Proper, and a Noun Substantive Common.

Q. *What is the difference between a Noun Substantive Proper and a Noun Substantive Common?*

A. A Noun Substantive Proper, is proper only to the thing it betokeneth, as, *Edwardus* is my proper Name; a Noun Substantive Common, is common to more, as *Homo* is a common Name to all Men.

Q. *Is the word [City] a proper or a common Name?*

A. It is a common Name, because every City may be called a City.

Q. *Is London a proper or a common Name?*

A. It is a proper Name, because you cannot call every City *London*.

Q. *Is a Woman a proper or a common Name?*

A. It is a common Name, because you may call every Woman a Woman.

Q. *Is Sarah a proper or a common Name?*

A. A proper Name, because we cannot call every Woman *Sarah*.

Q. *Is a Town a proper or a common Name?*

A. It is a common Name, because you may call every Town a Town.

Q. *Is Watford a proper or a common Name?*

A. A proper Name, because you cannot call every Town *Watford*.

Numbers of Nouns.

Q. *HOW many Numbers are in Nouns?*

A. Two; the Singular and the Plural.

Q. *How do you know the Singular Number?*

A. The Singular Number speaketh but of one, as *Lapis*, a Stone.

Q. *How do you know the Plural Number?*

A. The Plural Number speaketh of more than one, as *Lapides* Stones.

Q. *What Number is an Hand?*

A. The Singular Number; because it speaketh but of one,

Q. *What Number is Fingers?*

A. The Plural Number; because it speaketh of more than one.

Q. *What Number is a Flock?*

A. The Singular Number.

Q. *How can that be? When in a Flock there be hundreds of Cattle.*

A. Tho' there be never so many in a Flock, yet it is but one Flock, and therefore of the Singular Number.

Cases of Nouns.

Q. *HOW many Cases are there in declining of Nouns?*

A. Six, both Singularly and Plurally; the Nominative, the Genitive, the Dative, the Accusative, the Vocative, and the Ablative.

Q. *How do you know the Nominative Case?*

A. The Nominative Case cometh before the Verb.

Q. *What Question doth the Nominative Case answer to?*

A. It answereth to the question—*who* or *what*, as *Magister docet*, the Master teacheth: Who teacheth? the Master teacheth: *Magister* is the Nominative Case, which comes before the Verb *docet*.

Q. *How do you know the Genitive Case?*

A. The Genitive Case is known by this token [*of*]

Q. *To*

Q. To what question doth the Genitive Case answer?

A. To the question *whose* or *whereof*, as *Doctrina Magistri*, the Learning of the Master: Whose Learning? The Master's.

Q. How do you know the Dative Case?

A. The Dative Case is known by this token [to] *en for*

Q. To what question doth the Dative Case answer?

A. To this question, *to whom*, or *to what*, as *Do librum Magistro*, I give a Book to the Master. To whom do you give it? To the Master.

Q. How do you know the Accusative Case?

A. The Accusative Case follows the Verb.

Q. To what question doth the Accusative Case answer?

A. To the question — *whom* or *what*, as *amo Magistrum*, I love the Master: Whom do you love? The Master.

Q. How do you know the Vocative Case?

A. The Vocative Case is known by calling or speaking to, as *ô Magister!* O Master!

Q. What is the sign of the Vocative Case?

A. [ô] Is the Sign of the Vocative Case.

Q. How do you know the Ablative Case?

A. The Ablative Case is commonly joined with Prepositions serving to the Ablative Case, as *de Magistro*, of (or concerning) the Master; *coram Magistro*, before (or in presence of) the Master.

Q. How many Signs are there of the Ablative Case?

A. Seven; — *in*, *with*, *through*, *for*, *from*, *by*, and *than* after the Comparative Degree.

Of Articles.

Q. FROM whence are Articles borrowed?

A. From the Pronouns.

Q. How many Articles are there?

A. Three; *hic*, *hæc*, *hoc*,

Q. How are they declined?

A.

Singulariter	Nom.	hic, hæc, hoc.	Pluraliter	Nom.	hi, hæ, hæc.
	Gen.	hujus.		Gen.	horum, harum,
	Dat.	huic.		Dat.	his. (horum.)
	Acc.	hunc, hanc, hoc.		Acc.	hos, has, hæc.
	Voc.	caret.		Voc.	caret.
	Abl.	hoc, hac, hoc.		Abl.	his.

2. What Genders are the three Articles?

A. Hic is the Masculine, hæc is the Feminine, and hoc is the Neuter Gender.

2. What Gender is hujus, huic and his?

A. All Genders, because they have but one ending.

2. What is the Article of the Masculine Gender in all Cases of the Articles?

	Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Acc.	Voc.	Abl.
A. Sing.	hic,	hujus,	huic,	hunc,	caret,	hoc,
Plur.	hi,	horum,	his,	hos,	caret,	his.

2. What is the Article of the Feminine Gender in all Cases of the Articles?

	Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Acc.	Voc.	Abl.
A. Sing.	hæc,	hujus,	huic,	hanc,	caret,	hæc.
Plur.	hæ,	harum,	his,	has,	caret,	his.

2. What is the Neuter Gender throughout all the Cases of the Articles?

	Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Acc.	Voc.	Abl.
A. Sing.	hoc,	hujus,	huic,	hoc,	caret,	hoc.
Plur.	hæc,	horum,	his,	hæc,	caret,	his.

Of Genders.

2. HOW many Genders of Nouns be there?

A. Seven; the Masculine, the Feminine, the Neuter, the Common of Two, the Common of Three, the Doubtful, and the Epicene.

2. How

Q. How do you know the Masculine Gender?

A. It is declined with this Article *hic* as *hic vir* a Man; all words that are declined with the Article *hic*, are of the Masculine Gender.

Q. How do you know the Feminine Gender?

A. The Feminine Gender is declined with the Article *hæc*, as *hæc mulier*, a Woman; all Nouns that are declined with the Article *hæc*, are of the Feminine Gender.

Q. How do you know the Neuter Gender?

A. The Neuter Gender is declined with this Article *hoc*, as *hoc saxum*, a Stone; all Nouns that are declined with the Article *hoc*, are of the Neuter Gender.

Q. How do you know the Common of two Gender?

A. The Common of Two is declined with the Articles *hic* and *hæc*, as *hic & hæc parens*, a Father or Mother: all Nouns that are declined with *hic & hæc* are of the Common of two Gender.

Q. How do you know the Common of three Gender?

A. The Common of three is declined with *hic*, *hæc* and *hoc*; as *hic, hæc & hoc Felix*, Happy; all Nouns that are declined with *hic, hæc & hoc* are Adjectives, and of the same Gender as the Substantives are with which they agree.

Q. How do you know the Doubtful Gender?

A. The Doubtful Gender is declined with *hic* or *hæc*, as *hic vel hæc dies*, a day; all Nouns that are declined with *hic vel hæc*, are of the Doubtful Gender.

Q. How do you know the Epicene Gender?

A. The Epicene Gender is declined with one Article, under which Article both kinds are signified, as *hic passer*, either an he or a she Sparrow; *hæc aquila*, an Eagle, both the he and the she.

Declensions of Nouns.

Q. HOW many Declensions of Nouns are there?

A. Five.

Q. How do you know what Declension any Noun is of?

A. By the ending of the Genitive Case Singular.

Q. What Declension is a Noun of, when the Genitive Case Singular ends in æ.

A. Of the first Declension.

Q. What is the Example of the first Declension ?

A. Musa, a Song.

Q. How is the word Musa (which is Latin for a Song) declined ?

A.

Singulariter	{	Nom. hæc musa, a	}	Song.
		Gen. hujus musæ, of a		
		Dat. huic musæ, to a		
		Acc. hanc musam, the		
		Voc. ô musa o		
		Abl. ab hac musa, from a		

Pluraliter	{	Nom. hæ musæ,	}	Songs.
		Gen. harum musarum, of		
		Dat. his musis, to		
		Acc. has musas, the		
		Voc. ô musæ, o		
		Abl. ab his musis, from		

Q. Do all Nouns of the first Declension end in [is] in the Dative and the Ablative Cases Plural ?

A. No; *Filia* a Daughter, and *Nata* a Daughter, do make the Dative and the Ablative Plural in *is*, or in *abus*; as Dative and Ablative, *filiis* or *filiabus*; Dative and Ablative *natis* or *natabus*; but *Dea* a Goddess, *mula* a Mule, *equa* a Mare, *liberta* a Free Woman, do make the Dative and Ablative Cases plural in *abus* only; as *Dativo* & *Ablativo*, *deabus*, *mulabus*, *equabus*, *libertabus*.

Q. Are all Nouns of the first Declension of the Feminine Gender, that is, are they all declined with the Article hæc ?

A. No;

<i>Scriba, poëta</i> <i>salpa, dama</i> <i>advena, verna,</i>	} are of the	{	Masculine, Doubtful Com. of two	}	Gend.	{	with many others.	}	Q. What
--	--------------	---	--	---	-------	---	----------------------------------	---	----------------

Q. What Declension is a Noun of, when the Genitive Case Singular endeth in i?

A. Of the second Declension.

Q. What is the Example of the second Declension.

A. Magister, a Master.

Q. How is Magister declined.

A.

Singulariter	{	Nom. hic magister, a	}	Master.
		Gen. hujus magistri, of a		
		Dat. huic magistro, to a		
		Acc. hunc magistrum, the		
		Voc. ô magister, o		
		Abl. ab hoc magistro, from a		

Pluraliter	{	Nom. hi magistri,	}	Masters.
		Gen. horum, magistrorum, of		
		Dat. his magistris, to		
		Acc. hos magistros, the		
		Voc. ô magistri, o		
		Abl. ab his magistris, from		

Q. Are all Nouns of the second Declension of the Masculine Gender?

A. No;

Humus, domus,	}	are of	{	the	{	Fem.	}	Gend.	{	with many others.			
regnum, pelagus,											{	Neut.	}
specus, pharus,													

Q. When the Nominative Singular of the second Declension ends in us, how must the Vocative Singular end?

A. In e; as Nom. hic dominus, Voc. ô domine.

Q. Do all Nouns that end in us in the Nominative Singular, end in e in the Vocative?

A. No; Deus God makes ô deus, and filius makes ô fili in the Vocative Case.

Q. When the Nominative Case Singular of the second Declension ends in ius, and the word be a proper Name of a Man, how must the Vocative end?

A. In

A. In *i*; as Nom. *hic Georgius*, George, Voc. *ô Georgi*, *hic Virgilius*, Voc. *ô Virgili*.

Q. What Nouns make the Vocative to end in *e* or in *us*?

A. These six, *agnus* a Lamb, *lucus* a Grove, *vulgus* the common People, *populus* people, *chorus* a Choir, *fluvius* a River; as *agne* or *agnus*, Voc. *luce* or *lucus*, Voc. *vulge* or *vulgus*, Voc. *popule* or *populus*, Voc. *chore* or *chorus*, Voc. *fluvie* or *fluvius*. Voc.

Q. How do the Nominative, the Accusative, and the Vocative Cases of all Nouns of the Neuter Gender end, of what Declension soever they be?

A. They end all alike.

Q. How do they all end in the Plural Number?

A. In the plural Number they end all in *a*.

Q. Give an Example of a Noun that is of the Neuter Gender, and second Declension?

A. *Hoc regnum*, a Kingdom.

Q. How is *regnum* declined?

A.

Singulariter	{	Nom. <i>hoc regnum</i> , a	}	Kingdom.
		Gen. <i>hujus regni</i> , of a		
		Dat. <i>huic regno</i> , to a		
		Acc. <i>hoc regnum</i> , the		
		Voc. <i>ô regnum</i> , o		
		Abl. <i>ab hoc regno</i> , from a		

Pluraliter	{	Nom. <i>hæc regna</i> ,	}	Kingdoms.
		Gen. <i>horum regnorum</i> , of		
		Dat. <i>his regnis</i> , to		
		Acc. <i>hæc regna</i> , the		
		Voc. <i>ô regna</i> , o		
		Abl. <i>ab his regnis</i> , from		

Q. Do all Nouns that are of the Neuter Gender in the Plural Number end in *a*, in the Nominative, Accusative and Vocative Cases Plural?

A. No; *ambo* both, and *duo* two, do make the Neuter Gender in the Nominative, Accusative and Vocative Cases to end in *o*.

Q. How

2. How is *ambo* declined?

A.

Pluraliter	{	Nom. <i>ambo, ambæ, ambo.</i>
		Gen. <i>amborum, ambarum, amborum.</i>
		Dat. <i>ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.</i>
		Acc. <i>ambos, ambas, ambo.</i>
		Voc. <i>ambo, ambæ, ambo.</i>
		Abl. <i>ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.</i>

2. How is *duo* declined?

A.

Pluraliter	{	Nom. <i>duo, duæ, duo.</i>
		Gen. <i>duorum, duarum, duorum.</i>
		Dat. <i>duobus, duabus, duobus.</i>
		Acc. <i>duos, duas, duo.</i>
		Voc. <i>duo, duæ, duo.</i>
		Abl. <i>duobus, duabus, duobus.</i>

2. What declension is a Noun of, when the Genitive Case Singular endeth in *is*?

A. Of the third Declension.

2. What are the Examples of the third Declension?

A. *Lapis* a Stone, and *Parens* a Father or Mother.

2. How is *lapis* declined?

A.

Singulariter	{	Nom. <i>hic lapis, a</i>	} Stone
		Gen. <i>hujus lapidis, of a</i>	
		Dat. <i>huic lapidi, to a</i>	
		Acc. <i>hunc lapidem, the</i>	
		Voc. <i>ô lapis, o</i>	
		Abl. <i>ab hoc lapide from a</i>	

Pluraliter	{	Nom. <i>hi lapides,</i>	} Stones.
		Gen. <i>horum lapidum, of</i>	
		Dat. <i>his lapidibus, to</i>	
		Acc. <i>hos lapides, the</i>	
		Voc. <i>ô lapides, o</i>	
		Abl. <i>ab his lapidibus, from</i>	

2. How

Q. How is *parens* declined?

A.

Singulariter	Nom. <i>hic</i> & <i>hæc</i> <i>parens</i> , a	} Father or Mother.
	Gen. <i>hujus</i> <i>parentis</i> , of a	
	Dat. <i>huic</i> <i>parenti</i> , to a	
	Acc. <i>hunc</i> & <i>hanc</i> <i>parentem</i> , the	
	Voc. <i>ô</i> <i>parens</i> , o	
	Abl. <i>ab hoc</i> & <i>ab hac</i> <i>parente</i> , from a	

Pluraliter	Nom. <i>hi</i> & <i>hæ</i> <i>parentes</i>	} Fathers or Mothers.
	Gen. <i>horum</i> & <i>harum</i> <i>parentum</i> , of	
	Dat. <i>his</i> <i>parentibus</i> , to	
	Acc. <i>hos</i> & <i>has</i> <i>parentes</i> , the	
	Voc. <i>ô</i> <i>parentes</i> , o	
	Abl. <i>ab his</i> <i>parentibus</i> , from	

Q. Are all Nouns of the third Declension, of the Masculine, or Common of two Genders?

A. No;

Soror, uxor,	} with many others	Fem.	} Gender.
onus, opus,		Neut.	
grus, perdix,		Doubt.	

Q. How do the Accusative and Ablative Cases Singular, and the Genitive Cases Plural of the third Declension end?

A. The Accusative Case Singular commonly ends in *em*, but sometimes in *im*, and sometimes in *em* and *im*; the Ablative commonly ends in *e*, and sometimes in *i*, and sometimes in *e* and *i*; the Genitive Plural ends in *um*, and sometimes in *ium*.

Q. What Declension is a Noun of, when the Genitive Case Singular endeth in *us*?

A. Of the Fourth Declension.

Q. What is the Example of the fourth Declension?

A. *Manus* an Hand.

Q. How

Q. How is Manus declined?

Singulariter	Nom.	<i>hæ manus</i> , an	}	Hand.
	Gen.	<i>hujus manûs</i> , of an		
	Dat.	<i>huic manui</i> , to an		
	Acc.	<i>hanc manum</i> , the		
	Voc.	<i>ô manus</i> , o		
	Abl.	<i>ab hac manu</i> , from an		

Pluraliter	Nom.	<i>hæ manus</i> ,	}	Hands.
	Gen.	<i>harum manuum</i> , of		
	Dat.	<i>his manibus</i> , to		
	Acc.	<i>has manus</i> , the		
	Voc.	<i>ô manus</i> , o		
	Abl.	<i>ab his manibus</i> , from		

Q. Are all Nouns of the fourth Declension of the Feminine Gender?

A. No; *Visus*, *gradus*, with others, are of the Masculine Gender.

Q. What Declension is a Noun of, when the Genitive Case Singular endeth in *ei*?

A. Of the fifth Declension.

Q. What is the Example of the fifth Declension?

A. *Meridies*, a Noon-tide.

Q. How is *Meridies* declined?

A.

Singulariter	Nom.	<i>hic meridies</i> , a	}	Noon-tide.
	Gen.	<i>hujus meridiæi</i> , of a		
	Dat.	<i>huic meridiæi</i> , to a		
	Acc.	<i>hunc meridiem</i> , the		
	Voc.	<i>ô meridies</i> , o		
	Abl.	<i>ab hoc meridiæ</i> , from a		

Plu-

Pluraliter	Nom. <i>bi merides.</i>	} Noon-tides.
	Gen. <i>horum meridierum,</i> of	
	Dat. <i>his merdiebus,</i> to	
	Acc. <i>hos merides,</i> the	
	Voc. <i>ô merides,</i> o	
	Abl. <i>ab his merdiebus,</i> from	

Q. Are all Nouns of the fifth Declension of the Masculine Gender?

A. No; all Nouns of the fifth Declension are of the Feminine Gender, except *merides*, which is the Masculine, and *dies* a day, which is of the Doubtful Gender. In the Singular Number, the Masculine only in the Plural.

The Forming of the Declensions.

Q. HOW do the Genitive Cases Singular of the five Declensions end?

A. The Genitive Case Singular of

Gen. Sing.	The first Declension ends in	— æ, as <i>musæ.</i>
	The second in	— — — — i, as <i>magistri.</i>
	The third in	— — — — is, as <i>lapidis.</i>
	The fourth in	— — — — ūs, as <i>manūs.</i>
	The fifth in	— — — — ei, as <i>meridies.</i>

Q. How do the Dative Cases Singular of the fifth Declension end?

A. The Dative Case Singular of

Dat. Sing.	The first Declension ends in	— æ, as <i>musæ.</i>
	The second in	— — — — o, as <i>magistro.</i>
	The third in	— — — — i, as <i>lapidi.</i>
	The fourth in	— — — — ui, as <i>manui.</i>
	The fifth in	— — — — ei, as <i>meridies.</i>

Q. How

How do the Accusative Cases Singular of the five Declensions end?

The Accusative Case Singular of

Acc. Sing.	The first Declension ends in		— am, as musam.
	The second in		— — um, as magistrum.
	The third in		— — em, as lapidem.
	The fourth in		— — um, as manum.
	The fifth in		— — em, as meridiem.

How do the Vocative Cases Singular of the five Declensions end?

Like the Nominatives.

How do the Ablative Cases Singular of the five Declensions end?

The Ablative Case Singular of

Abl. Sing.	The first Declension ends in		— â, as musâ.
	The second in		— — o, as magistro.
	The third in		— — e, as lapide.
	The fourth in		— — u, as manu.
	The fifth in		— — e, as meridiē.

How do the Nominative Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?

The Nominative Case Plural of

Nom. Plural.	The first Declension ends in		— æ, as musæ.
	The second in		— — i, as magistri.
	The third in		— — es, as lapides.
	The fourth in		— — us, as manus.
	The fifth in		— — es, as meridies.

How do the Genitive Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?

The Genitive Case Plural of

Gen. Plural.	The first Declension ends in		arum, as musarum.
	The second in		— — orum, as magistrorum.
	The third in		— — um, as lapidum.
	The fourth in		— — uum, as manuum.
	The fifth in		— — erum, as meridierum.

2. How

Q. How do the Dative Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?

A. The Dative Case Plural of

Dat. Plural.	{	The first Declension ends in—	is, as <i>musis</i> .
		The second in —	is, as <i>magistris</i> .
		The third in —	bus, as <i>lapidibus</i> .
		The fourth in —	ibus, as <i>manibus</i> .
		The fifth in —	ebus, as <i>meridiebus</i> .

Q. How do the Accusative Cases Plural of the five Declensions end?

A. The Accusative Case Plural of

Acc. Plur.	{	The first Declension ends in —	as, as <i>musas</i> .
		The second in —	os, as <i>magistros</i> .
		The third in —	es, as <i>lapides</i> .
		The fourth in —	us, as <i>manus</i> .
		The fifth in —	es, as <i>meridies</i> .

The Vocatives are formed like the Nominatives, and Ablatives like the Datives.

The Declining of Adjectives.

Q. HOW many kinds of Nouns Adjectives are there?
A. Two; Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations, and Nouns Adjectives of three Articles.

Q. After what manner are Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations declined?

A. After the first and second Declensions, that is the Termination or Ending is like to a Noun of the second Declension Masculine Gender; the second like a Noun of the first Declension; and the third like a Noun of the second Declension Neuter Gender; as *bonus jocus*, *bona musa*, *bonum regnum*.

Q. What is the Example of a Noun Adjective of three Terminations?

A. Bonus.

Q. H

How is bonus declined?

- Nom. *bonus, bona, bonum.*
 Gen. *boni, bonæ, boni.*
 Dat. *bono, bonæ, bono.*
 Acc. *bonum, bonam, bonum.*
 Voc. *bone, bona, bonum.*
 Abl. *bono, bona, bono.*
- Nom. *boni, bonæ, bona.*
 Gen. *bonorum, bonarum, bonorum.*
 Dat. *bonis.*
 Acc. *bonos, bonas, bona.*
 Voc. *boni, bonæ, bona.*
 Abl. *bonis.*

*Are all Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations declined
 like bonus?*

No; there are some which make the Genitive Case
 Singular in *ius*, and the Dative in *i*; as *unus una unum.*

How is unus declined?

- Nom. *unus, una, unum.*
 Gen. *unius.*
 Dat. *uni.*
 Acc. *unum, unam, unum.*
 Voc. *unc, una, unum.*
 Abl. *uno, una, uno.*
- Nom. *uni, unæ, una.*
 Gen. *unorum, unarum, unorum.*
 Dat. *unis.*
 Acc. *unos, unas, una.*
 Voc. *uni, unæ, una.*
 Abl. *unis.*

Hath unus una unum, always the Plural Number?

Unus hath not the Plural Number, but when it is join-
 ed to a word that wants the Singular Number, as *unc*
literæ, one Letter.

What words are declined like unus, una, unum?

A. Totus,

A. Totus, solus, ullus, alius, alter, uter, and no
with their Compounds; only the five last lack the
tive Case.

Q. After what manner are Nouns Adjectives of three
ticles declined?

A. After the third Declension.

Q. What are the Examples of Nouns Adjectives of
Articles?

A. Felix happy, and tristis sad.

Q. How is Felix declined?

A.

Singulariter	}	Nom. <i>hic, hæc & hoc Felix.</i>
		Gen. <i>hujus felicitis.</i>
		Dat. <i>huic felici.</i>
		Acc. <i>hunc & hanc felicem, & hoc felix.</i>
		Voc. <i>ô felix.</i>
		Abl. <i>ab hoc, hac & hoc felice vel felici.</i>

Pluraliter	}	Nom. <i>hi & hæ felices, & hæc felicia.</i>
		Gen. <i>horum, harum, & horum felicitum.</i>
		Dat. <i>his felicibus.</i>
		Acc. <i>hos & has felices, & hæc felicia.</i>
		Voc. <i>ô felices, & ô felicia.</i>
		Abl. <i>ab his felicibus.</i>

Q. How is tristis declined?

A.

Singulariter	}	Nom. <i>hic & hæ tristis, & hoc triste.</i>
		Gen. <i>hujus tristis.</i>
		Dat. <i>huic tristi.</i>
		Acc. <i>hunc & hanc tristem, & hoc triste.</i>
		Voc. <i>ô tristis, & ô triste.</i>
		Abl. <i>ab hoc, hac & hoc tristi.</i>

Pluraliter	}	Nom. <i>hi & hæ tristes, & hæc tristia.</i>
		Gen. <i>horum, harum, & horum tristium.</i>
		Dat. <i>his tristibus.</i>
		Acc. <i>hos & has tristes, & hæc tristia.</i>
		Voc. <i>ô tristes, & ô tristia.</i>
		Abl. <i>ab his tristibus.</i>

Comparison of Nouns.

thru 2. **W**HAT Nouns may be compared?

A. Nouns Adjectives may be compared.

2. May all Nouns Adjectives be compared?

of A. No; only such whose signification may increase or be diminished; that is, whose signification may be made more or less, as hard, harder, hardest, &c.

2. How many degrees of Comparison are there?

A. Three; the Positive, the Comparative, and the Superlative.

2. How do you know the Positive Degree?

A. The Positive betokeneth the thing absolutely without excess, as *durus* hard.

2. How do you know the Comparative Degree?

A. The Comparative somewhat exceedeth his Positive in signification, as *durior* harder.

2. From whence is the Comparative Degree formed?

A. From the first Case of his Positive that endeth in *i*, by putting thereto *or* and *us*.

2. Give an Example?

A. *Duri* is the first Case of the Positive that endeth in *i*, from which (by putting thereto *or* and *us*) is formed the Comparative *durior*, as *hic* & *hæc durior*, & *hoc durius*; from *tristi* the first Case of the Positive that endeth in *i*, is formed *hic* & *hæc tristior*, & *hoc tristius* the Comparative; from *dulci* is formed *hic* & *hæc dulcior*, & *hec dulcius* the Comparative.

2. How do you know the Superlative degree?

A. The Superlative exceedeth his Positive in the highest Degree; as *durissimus* hardest.

2. Whence is the Superlative formed?

A. From the first Case of his Positive that endeth in *i*, by putting thereto *s* and *imus*, as from *duri* (by putting to *s* is made *duris*, unto which (by putting thereto) *imus*, is made *durissimus* the Superlative, from *tristi* is formed *tristissimus*, and from *dulci* is formed *dulcissimus*.

Q. Do all Adjectives that are compared, form their Comparative and Superlative Degrees after the same manner?

A. No.

Q. How many Exceptions are there from the general Rules?

A. Four.

Q. Which is the first Exception?

A. These that follow, *bonus, melior, optimus, not bonus, bonior, bonissimus; malus, pejor, pessimus, magnus, major, maximus; parvus, minor, minimus; multus, plurimus; multa, plurima; multum, plus, plurimum.*

Q. What is the second Exception from these general Rules?

A. When the Positive endeth in *er*, then the Superlative shall be formed of the Nominative Case, by putting to *rimus*.

Q. Give an Example?

A. From the Positive Degree, *pulcher* fair, by putting thereto *rimus*, is formed *pulcherrimus* the Superlative.

Q. What is the third Exception from those general Rules?

A. These Nouns that end in *lis* in the Positive, make the Superlative by changing *is* into *limus*, as from *humilis* the Positive, is formed *humillimus*; the Superlative; from *similis*, *simillimus*; from *facilis*, *facillimus*, from *agilis*, *agillimus*; from *gracilis*, *gracillimus*; from *docilis* is formed the Superlative *docillimus*.

Q. How do all other Nouns Adjectives that end in *lis*, form their Superlative Degree?

A. They follow the general Rule aforegoing, that is, they form their Superlative from the first Case of the Positive that endeth in *i*, by putting to *s* and *simus*, as from *utilis* the Positive, is formed *utilissimus* the Superlative.

Q. What is the fourth Exception from these general Rules?

A. If a Vowel comes before *us*, it is then compared by the Adverbs *magis* more, and *maxime* most.

Q. What do you mean, when you say, if a Vowel comes before *us*?

A. If either *a, e, i, o, or u*, comes before the Syllable *us*, as *pius* godly, Positive; *magis pius* more godly, Comparative; *maxime pius* most godly, Superlative.

The Comparing of Adjectives.

		<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Com.</i>	<i>Sup.</i>
Singulariter	Nom.	bonus, bona, bonum,	melior, melior, melius,	optimus, optima, optimum.
	Gen.	boni, bonæ, boni,	melioris, melioris, melioris,	optimi, optimæ, optimi.
	Dat.	bono, bonæ, bono,	meliori, meliori, meliori,	optimo, optimæ, optimo,
	Acc.	bonum, bonam, bonum,	meliozem, meliozem, melius,	optimum, optimam, optimum,
	Voc.	bone, bona, bonum,	melior, melior, melius,	optime, optima, optimum,
	Abl.	bono, bona, bono,	meliori, meliori, meliori,	optimo, optima, optimo.
	Nom.	boni, bonæ, bona,	meliores, meliores, meliora,	optimi, optimæ, optima.
	Gen.	bonorum, bonarum, bonorum,	meliorum, meliorum, meliorum,	optimorum, optimarum, optimorum,
	Dat.	bonis,	melioribus,	optimis.
	Acc.	bonos, bonas, bona,	meliores, meliores, meliora,	optimos, optimas, optima,
	Voc.	boni, bonæ, bona,	meliores, meliores, meliora,	optimi, optimæ, optima.
	Abl.	bonis,	melioribus,	optimis.
Pluraliter			B	Singulariter

		<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Com.</i>	<i>Sup.</i>
Singulariter	Nom.	{ tristis, tristis, triste,	{ tristior, tristior, tristius,	{ tristissimus, tristissima, tristissimum.
	Gen.	{ tristis, tristis, tristis,	{ tristioris, tristioris, tristioris,	{ tristissimi, tristissimæ, tristissimi.
	Dat.	{ tristi, tristi, tristi,	{ tristiori, tristiori, tristiori,	{ tristissimo, tristissimæ, tristissimo.
	Acc.	{ tristem, tristem, triste,	{ tristiozem, tristiozem, tristius,	{ tristissimum, tristissimam, tristissimum.
	Voc.	{ tristis, tristis, triste,	{ tristior, tristior, tristius,	{ tristissime, tristissima, tristissimum.
	Abl.	{ tristi, tristi, tristi,	{ tristiori, tristiori, tristiori,	{ tristissimo, tristissima, tristissimo.
		{ tristes, tristes, tristia,	{ tristiores, tristiores, tristiora,	{ tristissimi, tristissimæ, tristissima,
Pluraliter	Nom.	{ tristium, tristium, tristium,	{ tristiorum, tristiorum, tristiorum,	{ tristissimorum, tristissimarum, tristissimorum.
	Dat.	{ tristibus,	{ tristioribus,	{ tristissimis.
	Acc.	{ tristes, tristes, tristia,	{ tristiores, tristiores, tristiora,	{ tristissimos, tristissimas, tristissima.
	Voc.	{ tristes, tristes, tristia,	{ tristiores, tristiores, tristiora,	{ tristissimi, tristissimæ, tristissima.
	Abl.	{ tristibus	{ tristioribus,	{ tristissimis.

		<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Com.</i>	<i>Sup.</i>
Singulariter	Nom.	{ tener, tenera, tenerum, teneri,	tenerior, tenerior, tenerius, tenerioris,	tenerrimus, tenerrima, tenerrimum. tenerrimi,
	Gen.	{ teneræ, teneri,	tenerioris, tenerioris,	tenerrimæ, tenerrimi.
	Dat.	{ tenero, teneræ, tenero,	teneriori, teneriori, teneriori,	tenerrimo, tenerrimæ, tenerrimo.
	Acc.	{ tenerum, teneram, tenerum,	teneriorem, teneriorem, tenerius,	tenerrimum, tenerrimam, tenerrimum,
	Voc.	{ tener, tenera, tenerum,	tenerior, tenerior, tenerius,	tenerrime, tenerrima, tenerrimum.
	Abl.	{ tenero, tenera, tenero,	teneriori, teneriori, teneriori,	tenerrimo, tenerrima, tenerrimo,
Pluraliter	Nom.	{ teneri, teneræ, tenera,	teneriores, teneriores, teneriora,	tenerrimi, tenerrimæ, tenerrima.
	Gen.	{ tenerorum, tenerarum, tenerorum,	teneriorum, teneriorum, teneriorum,	tenerrimorum, tenerrimarum, tenerrimorum.
	Dat.	{ teneris,	tenerioribus,	tenerrimis.
	Acc.	{ teneros, teneras, tenera,	teneriores, teneriores, teneriora,	tenerrimos, tenerrimas, tenerrima.
	Voc.	{ teneri, teneræ, tenera,	teneriores, teneriores, teneriora,	tenerrimi, tenerrimæ, tenerrima.
	Abl.	{ teneris,	tenerioribus,	tenerrimis.

		<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Com.</i>	<i>Sup.</i>
Singulariter	Nom.	{ audax, audax, audax,	{ audacior, audacior, audacius,	{ audacissimus. audacissima. audacissimum.
	Gen.	{ audacis, audacis, audacis,	{ audacioris, audacioris, audacioris,	{ audacissimi. audacissimæ. audacissimi.
	Dat.	{ audaci, audaci, audaci,	{ audaciori, audaciori, audaciori,	{ audacissimo. audacissimæ. audacissimo.
	Acc.	{ audacem, audacem, audax,	{ audaciorem, audaciorem, audacius,	{ audacissimum. audacissimam. audacissimum.
	Voc.	{ audax, audax, audax,	{ audacior, audacior, audacius,	{ audacissime. audacissima. audacissimum.
	Abl.	{ audace, i, audace, i, audace, i,	{ audaciori, audaciori, audaciori,	{ audacissimo. audacissima. audacissimo.
		{ audaces, audaces, audacia,	{ audaciores, audaciores, audaciora,	{ audacissimi. audacissimæ. audacissima.
Pluraliter	Gen.	{ audacium, audacium, audacium,	{ audaciorum, audaciorum, audaciorum,	{ audacissimorum audacissimarum audacissimorum
	Dat.	{ audacibus,	{ audacioribus,	{ audacissimis.
	Acc.	{ audaces, audaces, audacia,	{ audaciores, audaciores, audaciora,	{ audacissimos. audacissimas. audacissima.
	Voc.	{ audaces, audaces, audacia,	{ audaciores, audaciores, audaciora,	{ audacissimi. audacissimæ. audacissima.
	Abl.	{ audacibus,	{ audacioribus,	{ audacissimis.

Adjectives compared by *Magis* and *Maxime*.

		<i>Pos.</i>	<i>Com.</i>	<i>Sup.</i>
Singular	Nom.	{ pius, pia, pium,	magis pius, pia, pium,	maxime pius, pia, pium,
	Gen.	{ pii, piæ, pii,	magis pii, piæ, pii,	maxime pii, piæ, pii,
	Dat.	{ pio, piæ, pio,	magis pio, piæ, pio,	maxime pio, piæ, pio,
	Acc.	{ pium, piam, pium,	magis pium, piam, pium,	maxime pium, piam, pium,
	Voc.	{ pie, pia, pium,	magis pie, pia, pium,	maxime pie, pia, pium,
	Abl.	{ pio, pia, pio,	magis pio, pia, pio,	maxime pio, pia, pio,
Plural	Nom.	{ pii, piæ, pia,	magis pii, piæ, pia,	maxime pii, piæ, pia,
	Gen.	{ piorum, piarum, piorum,	magis piorum, piarum, piorum,	maxime piorum, piarum, piorum,
	Dat.	{ piis,	magis piis,	maxime piis,
	Acc.	{ pios, pias, pia,	magis pios, pias, pia,	maxime pios, pias, pia,
	Voc.	{ pii, piæ, pia,	magis pii, piæ, pia,	maxime pii, piæ, pia,
	Abl.	{ piis,	magis piis,	maxime piis,

Of the Pronouns.

Q. **W**HAT is a Pronoun?

A. A Pronoun is a part of Speech much like to a Noun, which is used in shewing or rehearsing.

Q. How many Pronouns are there?

A. Fifteen; *ego, tu, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester, nostras, vestras.*

Q. How many Pronouns have the Vocative Case?

A. Four; *tu, meus, noster* and *nostras.*

Q. How many want the Vocative Case?

A. Eleven; *ego, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, tuus, suus, vester* and *vestras.*

Q. What may be added to them?

A. Their Compounds; *egomet, tute, idem*, and also *quæ, quod.*

Q. Into how many Kinds are Pronouns divided?

A. Into four Kinds especially; 1. Primitives, 2. Demonstratives, 3. Relatives, and 4. Derivatives.

Q. How many Pronouns Primitive are there?

A. Eight; *ego, tu, sui, ille, ipse, iste, hic, and is.*

Q. Why be they called Primitives?

A. Because they are not derived from others.

Q. What else be they called?

A. Demonstratives; because they shew a thing not spoken of before.

Q. How many Pronouns Relatives are there?

A. Six; *hic, ille, iste, is, idem*, and *qui.*

Q. Why be they called Relatives?

A. Because they rehearse a thing spoken of before.

Q. How many Pronouns Derivatives are there?

A. Seven; *meus, tuus, suus, noster, vester, nostras, vestras.*

Q. Why be they called Derivatives?

A. Because they be derived from their Primitives; *mei, tui, sui, nostri*, and *vestri.*

Q. From what is the Derivative *meus* derived?

A. From the Primitive *mei*; *tuus* from the Primitive *tui*; *suus* from *sui*; *noster* and *nostras* from *nostri*; and *vester* and *vestras* from the Primitive *vestri.*

Q. How

Q. How many things belong to a Pronoun ?

A. Five ; 1. Number, 2. Case. 3. Gender, 4. Declension, and 5. Person.

The Declension of Pronouns.

Q. HOW many Declensions of Pronouns are there ?

A. Four.

Q. How many Pronouns are of the first Declension ?

A. Three ; — ego, tu, sui.

Q. How doth the Genitive Case Singular of the first Declension of Pronouns end ?

A. In i ; as Gen. me i, Gen. tu-i, Gen. su-i.

Q. How is ego declined ?

A.

Singulariter	Nom. ego.	Pluraliter	Nom. nos.
	Gen. mei.		Gen. nostrum, vel, nostri.
	Dat. mihi.		Dat. nobis.
	Acc. me.		Acc. nos.
	Voc. caret.		Voc. caret.
	Abl. à me.		Abl. à nobis.

Q. How is tu declined ?

A.

Singulariter	Nom. tu	Pluraliter	Nom. vos.
	Gen. tui.		Gen. vestrum, vel, vestri.
	Dat. tibi.		Dat. vobis.
	Acc. tu.		Acc. vos.
	Voc. ô tu.		Voc. ô vos.
	Abl. à te.		Abl. à vobis.

Q. How is sui declined ?

A.

Singulariter	and	Pluraliter	Nom. caret.	Acc. se.
			Gen. sui.	Voc. caret.
			Dat. sibi.	Abl. à se.

Q. How many Pronouns are of the second Declension ?

A. Six ; ille, ipse, iste, hic, is, and qui.

Q. How do the Genitive Cases Singular of the second Declension of Pronouns end ?

B 4

A. In

A. In *ius*, and sometimes in *jus*; as Gen. *ist-ius*, Gen. *ill-ius*, Gen. *ipf-ius*, Gen. *hu-jus*, Gen. *e-jus*, and Gen. *cu-jus*.

Q. *How is iste declined?*

A. Singulariter	Pluraliter
Nom. iste, ista, istud.	Nom. isti, istæ, ista.
Gen. istius.	Gen. istorum, istarum, istorum
Dat. isti.	Dat. istis.
Acc. istum, istam, istud.	Acc. istos, istas, ista.
Voc. caret.	Voc. caret.
Abl. isto, ista, isto.	Abl. istis.

Q. *How is ille declined?*

A. Like *iste*, and so is *ipse*, except in the Nominative and Accusative Cases Singular, *ipse* makes *ipsum*.

Q. *Decline ille?*

A. Singulariter	Pluraliter
Nom. ille, illa, illud.	Nom. illi, illæ, illa.
Gen. illius.	Gen. illorum, illarum, illorum
Dat. illi.	Dat. illis.
Acc. illum, illam, illud.	Acc. illos, illas, illa.
Voc. caret.	Voc. caret.
Abl. illo, illa, illo.	Abl. illis.

Q. *Decline ipse?*

A. Singulariter	Pluraliter
Nom. ipse, ipsa, ipsum.	Nom. ipsi, ipsæ, ipsa.
Gen. ipsius.	Gen. ipforum, ipsarum, ipso- (rum).
Dat. ipsi.	Dat. ipsis.
Acc. ipsum, ipsam, ipsum.	Acc. ipsos, ipsas, ipsa.
Voc. caret.	Voc. caret.
Abl. ipso, ipsa, ipso.	Abl. ipsis.

Q. *How is hic declined?*

A. Nom. *hic*, *hæc*, *hoc*, as before in the Nouns.

Q. *How*

Q. *How is is declined ?*

A. Singulariter

Pluraliter

Nom. ii, ea, id.

Gen. ejus.

Dat. ei.

Acc. eum, eam, id.

Voc. caret.

Abl. eo, ea, eo.



Nom. is, eæ, ea.

Gen. eorum, earum, eorum.

Dat. iis *vel* eis.

Acc. eos, eas, ea.

Voc. caret.

Abl. iis, *vel* eis.

Q. *How is qui declined ?*

A. Singulariter

Pluraliter

Nom. qui, quæ, quod

Gen. cujus.

Dat. cui.

Acc. quem, quam, quod.

Voc. caret.

Abl. quo, qua, quo *vel* qui.



Nom. qui, quæ, quæ.

Gen. quorum, quarum, quorum.

Dat. quibus, *vel* quæis.

Acc. quos, quas, quæ.

Voc. caret.

Abl. quibus, *vel* quæis.

Q. *How are quis and quid declined ?*

A. *Quis* and *quid* are declined like *qui*, whether they are Interrogatives or Indefinites.

Q. *How is quicquid declined ?*

A.
$$\begin{array}{l} \text{Nom. } \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{quisquis,} \\ \text{quicquid,} \end{array} \right\} \text{Acc. quicquid.} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Abl. } \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{quoquo,} \\ \text{-quaqua,} \\ \text{quoquo,} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right.$$

Q. *What is quid ?*

A. *Quid* is always a Substantive of the Neuter Gender.

Q. *How many Pronouns are of the third Declension ?*

A. Five; *meus*, *tuus*, *suus*, *noster* and *vester*.

Q. *How are they declined ?*

A. Like Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations.

Q. *How doth the Genitive Case Singular of the third Declension of Pronouns end ?*

A. In *i* or in *æ*, as *mei*, *meæ*, *mei*.

Q. *Decline meus.*

A. Singulariter

Nom. meus, mea, meum.

Gen. mei, meæ, mei.

Dat. meo, meæ, meo.

Acc. meum, meam, meum.

Voc. mî, mea, meum.

Abl. meo, mea, meo.

Pluraliter

Nom. mei, meæ, mea.

Gen. meorum, mearum, me

Dat. meis. orum

Acc. meos, meas, mea.

Voc. mei, meæ, mea.

Abl. meis.

Q. How are tuus, suus, noster, and vester declined ?

A. Like meus, except only tuus, suus, and vester want the Vocative Case.

Q. How many pronouns are of the fourth Declension ?

A. Two; nostras, vestras, and also the Noun cujas.

Q. How doth the Genitive Case Singular of the fourth Declension end ?

A. In atis, as noster-atîs, vester-atîs, cuj-atîs.

Q. How is nostras declined ?

A.

Singulariter {

Nom. hic & hæc nostras, & hoc nostrate.

Gen. hujus nostratis.

Dat. huic nostrati.

Acc. hunc & hanc nostratem, & hoc nostrate.

Voc. ô nostras, & ô nostrate.

Abl. ab hoc, hac & hoc nostrate, vel nostrati.

Pluraliter {

Nom. hi & hæc nostrates, & hæc nostratia.

Gen. horum, harum & horum nostratium.

Dat. his nostratibus.

Acc. hos & has nostrates, & hæc nostratia.

Voc. ô nostrates, & ô nostratia.

Abl. ab his nostratibus.

Q. What are nostras, vestras, and the Noun cujas called ?

A. Gentiles; because they properly pertain to Countries or Nations, Sects or Factions.

Q. How many Persons hath a Pronoun ?

A. Three.

Q. How do you know the first Person ?

A. The first Person speaketh of himself, as ego I, nos we.

Q. How

How do you know the second Person?

The second Person is spoken to, as *tu* thou, *vos* ye.

Of what Person is every Vocative Case?

Of the second Person.

How do you know the third Person?

The third Person is spoken of, as *ille* he, *illi* they.

Of what Persons are all Nouns, Pronouns, and Participles?

Of the third Person, except *ego*, *tu*, *nos*, and *vos*.

Of a VERB.

Q *WHAT is a Verb?*

A. A Verb is a part of Speech declined with Mood and Tense.

What doth a Verb betoken?

A Verb betokeneth either to do, as *amo* I love; or to suffer, as *amor* I am loved; or to be, as *sum* I am.

How many kinds of Verbs are there?

Two; Personal and Impersonal.

What Verbs are called Personals?

Those Verbs that have Persons, as *amo*, *amas*, *amat*.

What Verbs are called Impersonals?

Those Verbs that have not Persons, as *tædet*, *puget*, &c.

Hath a Verb Impersonal never a Person?

Yes; it hath one Person only, and that is the third Person Singular; as *tædet* it irketh, *oportet* it behoveth.

How many kinds of Verbs Personals are there?

Five; Active, Passive, Neuter, Deponent and Commune.

How do you know a Verb Active?

A Verb Active endeth in *o*, and betokeneth to do, as *amo* I love.

How may a Verb Active be made a Verb Passive?

By putting *r* to the Verb Active, as by putting *r* to the Active *amo*, is made the Verb *amor*.

How do you know a Verb Passive?

A Verb Passive endeth *or*, and betokeneth to suffer, as *amor* I am loved.

Q. How may a Verb Passive be made a Verb Active?

A. By taking *r* from it; as by taking *r* from the Passive *amor*, is made the Active *amo*.

Q. How do you know a Verb Neuter?

A. A Verb Neuter endeth in *o* or *m*, and cannot take *r* to be made a Passive; as *curro* I run, *sum* I am.

Q. What signification hath a Verb Neuter?

A. Sometimes the Active Signification, as *curro* I run; and sometimes the Passive Signification, as *ægroto* I am sick.

Q. What is the Difference between a Verb Active and a Verb Neuter?

A. A Verb Active always ends in *o*, and betokeneth to do; a Verb Neuter endeth in *o* or *m*, and hath sometimes the Active and sometimes the Passive signification: a Verb Active may be made a Verb Passive, a Verb Neuter cannot.

Q. How do you know a Verb Deponent?

A. A Verb Deponent endeth in *r*, like a Verb Passive, as *loquor* I speak.

Q. What Signification hath a Verb Deponent?

A. It hath either the Active signification, as *loquor* I speak; or Neuter, as *glorior* I boast.

Q. How do you know a Verb Commune?

A. A Verb Commune hath both the Active and Passive signification, as *osculor te* I kiss thee, which is the Active signification; and *osculor à te* I am kissed of thee, which is the Passive signification.

Q. What is the difference between a Verb Passive, Deponent and Commune?

A. A Verb Passive hath always the Passive signification; a Verb Deponent hath sometimes an Active and sometimes a Neuter signification; a Verb Commune hath both Active and Passive significations; a Verb Passive may be made a Verb Active; a Verb Deponent and Commune cannot be turned into a Verb Active; a Verb Deponent and Commune have Gerunds and Supines like a Verb Active; a Verb Passive hath neither Gerunds nor Supines; a Verb Deponent and Commune have more Participles than a Verb Passive hath.

OF MOODS.

2. **HOW** many Moods are there ?

A. Six : the Indicative, the Imperative, the Optative, the Potential, the Subjunctive, and the Infinitive.

2. How do you know the Indicative Mood ?

A. The Indicative Mood sheweth a Reason True or False ; as *ego amo* I love ; or else asketh a Question, as *amas tu* dost thou love ?

2. How do you know the Imperative Mood ?

A. The Imperative Mood biddeth or commandeth : as *ama tu* love thou, *amato ille* let him love.

2. How do you know the Optative Mood ?

A. The Optative wisheth or desireth.

2. What are the Signs of the Optative Mood ?

A. Would God, I pray God, or God grant ; as *utinam amem* I pray God I love.

2. What hath the Optative Mood commonly joined with it ?

A. An Adverb of wishing.

2. How do you know the Potential Mood ?

A. The Potential Mood is known by these Signs ; may, can, might, would, could, should, or ought ; as *amem* I may or can love, without an Adverb joined with him.

2. How do you know the Subjunctive Mood ?

A. The Subjunctive Mood hath evermore some Conjunction joined with him ; as *cum amarem* when I loved.

2. Why is it called the Subjunctive Mood ?

A. Because it dependeth upon another Verb in the same Sentence, either going before or coming after, as *cum amarem, eram miser*.

2. How do you know the Infinitive Mood ?

A. The Infinitive Mood betokeneth to do, to suffer or to be, and hath neither Number, nor Person, nor Nominative Case.

2. By what Sign is the Infinitive Mood known ?

A. It is commonly known by this Sign (to) as *amare* to love.

2. When

Q. When two Verbs come together without any Nominative Case between them, with the Sign (to) between them, what must the later of them be?

A. The later of them must be the Infinitive Mood; as *cupio discere* I desire to learn; *discere* is the later of the two Verbs, and *cupio* the former.

Of GERUNDS.

Q. FROM whence are Gerunds derived?

A. From the Infinitive Mood of Verbs.

Q. How many Gerunds are there?

A. Three, which end in *di*, *do*, and *dum*; as *amandi*, *amando*, *amandum*.

Q. What Signification have Gerunds?

A. Both Active and Passive signification.

Q. Give an Example.

A. *Amandi* of loving, Active signification, or of being loved; *amando* in loving or in being loved; *amandum* to love or to be loved.

Of SUPINES.

Q. FROM whence are Supines derived?

A. From the Preterperfect Tense of Verbs.

Q. How many Supines belong to Verbs?

A. Two.

Q. How do they end?

A. The first Supine endeth in *um*, as *amatum*; the later endeth in *u*, as *amatu*.

Q. What Signification have Supines?

A. The first Supine hath the Active, and the later hath the Passive signification, as *amatum* to love, *amatu* to be loved.

Q. What is the Difference between the two Supines?

A. The first Supine ends in *um*, and hath the Active signification; the later Supine ends in *u*, and hath the Passive signification.

five signification : The first Supine is put after Verbs and Participles that betoken moving to place; the later Supine is put after Noun Adjectives, and may be turned into the Infinitive Mood Passive.

Of TENSES.

Q *HOW many Tenses or Times are there?*

A. Five; the Present Tense, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, the Preterpluperfect, and the Future Tense.

Q *How do you know the Present Tense?*

A. The Present Tense speaketh of the Time that now is, as *amo* I love.

Q *What is the Sign of the Present Tense?*

A. Do, dost, or doth.

Q *How do you know the Preterimperfect Tense?*

A. The Preterimperfect Tense speaketh of Time not perfectly past, as *amabam* I loved or did love?

Q *What is the Sign of the Preterimperfect Tense?*

A. Did or didst.

Q *How do you know the Preterperfect Tense?*

A. The Preterperfect Tense speaketh of the Time perfectly past, as *amavi* I have loved.

Q *What is the Sign of the Preterperfect Tense?*

A. Have, hast, or hath.

Q *How do you know the Preterpluperfect Tense?*

A. The Preterpluperfect Tense speaketh of the Time more than perfectly past, as *amaveram* I had loved.

Q *What is the Sign of the Preterpluperfect Tense?*

A. Had, or hadst.

Q *How do you know the Future Tense?*

A. The Future Tense speaketh of the Time to come.

Q *What is the Sign of the Future Tense?*

A. Shall or will, shalt or wilt.

PERSONS.

PERSONS.

Q. **H**OW many Persons pertain to Verbs?

A. Three in both Numbers.

Q. Which be they?

A. 1. 1. 2. 2. 3.
Sing. *ego amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou lovest; *ille amat*,
3. 1. 1. 2.
he loveth. — Plur. *nos amamus*, we love; *vos amatis*,
2. 3. 3.
ye love; *ille amant*, they love.

Of CONJUGATIONS.

Q. **H**OW many Conjugations have Verbs?

A. Four Conjugations.

Q. How do you know the first Conjugation?

A. The first Conjugation hath *ā* long before *re* and *ris*, as
amāre amāris.

Q. What do you mean by *ā* long before *re* and *ris*?

A. When *ā* is pronounced long before *re* and *ris*.

Q. How do you know the second Conjugation?

A. The second Conjugation hath *ē* long before *re* and *ris*,
as *docēre, docēris*.

Q. What do you mean by *ē* long before *re* and *ris*?

A. When *ē* is pronounced long before *re* and *ris*.

Q. How do you know the third Conjugation?

A. The third Conjugation hath *ĕ* short before *re* and *ris*,
as *legĕre, legĕris*.

Q. What do you mean by *ĕ* short before *re* and *ris*?

A. When *ĕ* is pronounced short before *re* and *ris*.

Q. How do you know the fourth Conjugation?

A. The Fourth Conjugation hath *ī* long before *re* and *ris*,
as *audīre, audīris*.

Q. What do you mean by *ī* long before *re* and *ris*?

A. When *ī* is pronounced long before *re* and *ris*.

Q. How are Verbs in *o* of the four Conjugations declined?

A. After these Examples following.

1. *amo*

1. <i>amo.</i>	} is the Exam- ple of the	} first second third fourth	} Conjugation.
2. <i>doceo.</i>			
3. <i>lego.</i>			
4. <i>audio.</i>			

How do you decline *amo*?

amo, amas, amavi, amāre, amandi, amando, amandum, amatum, amatu, amans, amaturus—to love.

How do you decline *doceo*?

Doceo, doces, docui, docēre, docendi, docendo, docendum, doctum, doctu, docens, docturus—to teach.

How do you decline *lego*?

Lego, legis, legi, legēre, legendi, legendo, legendum, lectum, lectu, legens, lecturus—to read.

How do you decline *audio*?

Audio, audis, audiui, audīre, audiendi, audiendo, audiendum, auditum, auditu, audiens, auditurus—to hear.

The Forming of VERBS.

WHAT are the first Persons Singular of the first Conjugation throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Ind. Mood.	{ Present Ten.	{ Singulariter	<i>amo</i> , I love.
			<i>amabam</i> , I loved or did love.
			<i>amavi</i> , I have loved.
			<i>amaveram</i> , I had loved.
			<i>amabo</i> , I shall or will love.

The Imperative wants the first Person Singular.

Potential.	{ Present.	{ Singulariter	<i>amem</i> , I may or can love,
			<i>amarem</i> , I might or could love.
			<i>amaverim</i> , I might, would, should or ought to have loved.
			<i>amavissem</i> , I might, would, should or ought to had loved.
			<i>amavero</i> , I may or can love hereafter.

Infinit.

Infinit.	Present	{	<i>amare</i>	{	Preterperf.	{	<i>amavisse</i> , to
	and				and		have or had
	Preterim.				Preterplu.		loved.

Future Tense, *amaturum esse* to love hereafter. Gerund *amandi* of loving, *amando* in loving, *amandum* to love. Supines *amatum* to love, *amatu* to be loved. A Participle of the present Tense, *amans* loving. A Participle of the Future in *rus*, *amaturus* to love or about to love.

Q. What are the second Persons singular of the first Conjugation of Verbs in o, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indicative.	Present T.	{	Singulariter.	<i>amas</i> , thou lovest.
	Preterim.			<i>amabas</i> , thou didst love.
	Preterper.			<i>amavisti</i> , thou hast loved.
	Preterplu.			<i>amaveras</i> , thou hadst loved.
	Future T.			<i>amabis</i> , thou shalt or will love.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *ama amato*, love thou.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	{	Singulariter.	<i>ames</i> , thou mayst, or canst love
	Preterim.			<i>amares</i> , thou mightest or couldst love.
	Preterper.			<i>amaveris</i> , thou might'st, wouldst, should'st, or oughtest to have loved.
	Preterplu.			<i>amavisses</i> , thou might'st, wouldst, should'st, or oughtest to have loved.
	Future T.			<i>amaveris</i> , thou mayst or canst love hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is the same, whatsoever Number or Person you form.

Q. But why do you not form the Optative and the Subjunctive, as well as the Potential?

A. T

to
had
crum
to lov
Par
rtic
to lov
st C
Ten
Ind Mood
e.
to, l
ait lo
cou
woul
to l
woul
to
canit lo
umbe
Ind Mood
e Subj
A. T

1. That is needless, because the Optative, and the Subjunctive, are formed like the Potential, in all Tenses, Numbers and Persons, and do differ only in signification, and the sign of the Mood.

2. *What are the third Persons Singular of the first Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all the Moods and Tenses?*

Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>amat</i> , he loveth.
Preterim.		<i>amabat</i> , he loved, or did love.
Preterper.		<i>amavit</i> , he hath loved.
Preterplu.		<i>amaverat</i> , he had loved.
Future T.		<i>amabit</i> , he shall or will love.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *amet amato*, love he, or let him love.

Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>amet</i> , he may, or can love.
Preterim.		<i>amaret</i> , he might, or could love.
Preterper.		<i>amaverit</i> , he might, would, should, or ought to have loved.
Preterplu.		<i>amavisset</i> , he might, would, should, or ought to had loved.
Future.		<i>amaverit</i> , he may, or can love hereafter.

3. *What are the first Persons Plural of the first Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>amamus</i> , we love.
Preterim.		<i>amabamus</i> , we loved, or did love.
Preterper.		<i>amavimus</i> , we have loved.
Preterplu.		<i>amaveramus</i> , we had loved.
Future		<i>amabimus</i> , we shall or will love.

Impera-

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *amemus*, let love.

Potential Mood.	{	Present T.	} Pluraliter.	{	<i>amemus</i> , we may, or can love.
		Preterim.			<i>amaremus</i> , we ought, or could love.
		Preterper.			<i>amaverimus</i> , we might, would, should, or ought to have loved.
		Preterplu.			<i>amavissetimus</i> , we might, would, should, ought to have loved.
		Future.			<i>amaverimus</i> , we may, or can love hereafter.

Q. What are the second Persons Plural of the first Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	Present T.	} Pluraliter.	{	<i>amatis</i> , ye love.
		Preterim.			<i>amabatis</i> , ye loved, or did love.
		Preterper.			<i>amavistis</i> , ye have loved.
		Preterplu.			<i>amaveratis</i> , ye had loved.
		Future.			<i>amabitis</i> , ye shall, or will love.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Plural, *amate* amate love ye.

Potential Mood.	{	Present T.	} Pluraliter.	{	<i>ametis</i> , ye may, or can love.
		Preterim.			<i>amaretis</i> , ye might, or could love.
		Preterper.			<i>amaveritis</i> , ye might, would, should, or ought to have loved.
		Preterplu.			<i>amavissetis</i> , ye might, would, should, or ought to have loved.
		Future.			<i>amaveritis</i> , ye may, or can love hereafter.

2. What are the third Persons Plural of the first Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>amant</i> , they love
	Preterim.		<i>amabant</i> , they loved, or did love.
	Preterper.		<i>amavêrunt</i> , <i>vel amavêre</i> , they have loved.
	Preterplu.		<i>amaverant</i> , they had loved.
	Future		<i>amabunt</i> , they shall, or will love.
Imperative Mood Present Tense Plural, <i>ament</i> , <i>amânto</i> , love they, or let them love.			

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>ament</i> , they may, or can love.
	Preterim.		<i>amarent</i> , they might, or could love.
	Preterper.		<i>amaverint</i> , they might, would, should, or ought to have loved.
	Preterplu.		<i>amavissent</i> , they might, would, should, or ought to had loved.
	Future.		<i>amaverint</i> , they may, or can love hereafter.

Infinitive Mood Present Tense, and Preterimperfect Tense, *amare*, to love; Preterperfect Tense, and Preterpluperfect Tense, *amavisse*, to have, or had loved. Gerunds, *amandi*, of loving, *amando*, in loving, *amandum*, to love. Supines, *amatum*, to love, *amatu*, to be loved. A Participle of the Present Tense, *amans*, loving; Participle of the Future in *rûs*, *amaturus*, to love, or about to love.

2. What are the first Persons Singular, of the second Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>doceo</i> , I teach.
	Preterim.		<i>docebam</i> , I taught or did teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docui</i> , I have taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docueram</i> , I had taught.
	Future.		<i>docebo</i> , I shall, or will teach.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>doceam</i> , I may, or can teach.
	Preterim.		<i>docerem</i> , I might, or could teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docuerim</i> , I might, would, should, or ought to have taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docuisssem</i> , I might, would, should, or ought to had taught.
	Future.		<i>docuero</i> , I may, or can teach hereafter.

Inf. M.	Present	<i>docere</i> ,	Preterp.	<i>docuisse</i> ,	to have taught.
	and				
	Preterim.	to teach.			

Future Tense, *docturum esse*, to teach hereafter. Gerund, *docendi*, of teaching, *docendo*, in teaching, *docens*, to teach. Supines, *doctum*, to teach, *doctu*, to be taught. A Participle of the Future in *rus*, *docturus*, to teach or about to teach.

Q. What are the second Persons Singular of the second Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>doces</i> , thou teacheft.
	Preterim.		<i>docebas</i> , thou didst teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docuisti</i> , thou hast taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docueras</i> , thou hadst taught.
	Future.		<i>docebis</i> , thou shalt, or wilt teach.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *doce* teach thou.

Q. What are the first Persons Plural of the second Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>docemus</i> , we teach.
Preterim.		<i>docebamus</i> , we did teach.
Preterper.		<i>docuimus</i> , we have taught.
Preterplu.		<i>docueramus</i> , we had taught.
Future.		<i>docebimus</i> , we shall, or will teach.

Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>doceamus</i> , we may, or can teach.
Preterim.		<i>doceremus</i> , we might, or could teach.
Preterper.		<i>docuerimus</i> , we might, would, should, or ought to have taught.
Preterplu.		<i>docuiffemus</i> , we might, would, should, or ought to had taught.
Future.		<i>docuerimus</i> , we may, or can teach hereafter.

Q. What are the second Persons Plural of the second Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>docetis</i> , ye teach.
Preterim.		<i>docebatis</i> , ye did teach.
Preterper.		<i>docuistis</i> , ye have taught.
Preterplu.		<i>docueratis</i> ye had taught.
Future.		<i>docebitis</i> , ye shall, or will teach.

Imperative Mood, present Tense Plural, *docete docetote*, teach ye.

Potential

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>doceas</i> , thou may'st, or can'st teach.
	Preterim.		<i>doceres</i> , thou might'st or could'st teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docueris</i> , thou might'st, would'st, should'st, or ought'st to have taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docuisses</i> , thou might'st, would'st, should'st or ought'st to have taught.
	Future.		<i>docueris</i> , thou may'st, or can'st teach hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. *What are the third Persons Singular of the second Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Modes and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>docet</i> , he teacheth.
	Preterim.		<i>docebat</i> , he did teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docuit</i> , he hath taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docuerat</i> , he had taught.
	Future.		<i>docebit</i> , he shall, or will teach.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *doceat* let him teach.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>doceat</i> , he may, or can teach.
	Preterim.		<i>doceret</i> , he might, or could teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docuerit</i> , he might, would, should, or ought to have taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docuisset</i> , he might, would, should, or ought to have taught.
	Future.		<i>docuerit</i> , he may, or can teach hereafter.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>doceatis</i> , ye may, or can teach.
	Preterim.		<i>doceretis</i> , ye might, or could teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docueritis</i> , ye might, would, should, or ought to have taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docuissetis</i> , ye might, would, should, or ought to had taught.
	Future.		<i>docueritis</i> , ye may, or can teach hereafter.

What are the third Persons Plural of the second Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>docent</i> , they teach.
	Preterim.		<i>docebant</i> , they did teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docuerunt, vel docuere</i> , they have taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docuerant</i> , they had taught.
	Future.		<i>docebunt</i> , they shall, or will teach.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *doceant docento*, let them teach.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>doceant</i> , they may, or can teach.
	Preterim.		<i>docerent</i> , they might, or could teach.
	Preterper.		<i>docuerint</i> , they might, would, should, ought to have taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>docuissent</i> , they might, would, should, or ought to had taught.
	Future.		<i>docuerint</i> , they may, or can teach hereafter.

Q. What are the first Persons Singular of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.
Ind. Mood. { Present T. } Singulariter { lego, I read.
 { Preterim. } { legebam, I did read.
 { Preterper. } { legi, I have read.
 { Preterplu. } { legeram, I had read.
 { Future. } { legam, I shall or will read.

Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood. { Present T. } Singulariter { legam, I may, or can read.
 { Preterim. } { legerem, I might, or could
 { Preterper. } { legerim, I might, would, should
 or ought to have read.
 { Preterplu. } { legissem, I might, would, should
 or ought to have read.
 { Future. } { legero, I may, or can read
 after.

Inf. M. { Present. } legere, { Preterp. } { to have
 { and } to { and } legisse, { or had
 { Preterim. } read. { Preterpl. } read.

Future Tense, *lecturum esse*, to read hereafter. Gerund, *legendi* of reading, *legendo* in reading, *legendum* to be read; Supines, *lectum* to read, *lectu* to be read: a Participle of the present Tense, *legens* reading; a Participle of the Future in *rus*, *lecturus* to read, or about to read.

Q. What are the second Persons Singular of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	present T.	Singulariter.	<i>legis</i> , thou readest.
	preterim.		<i>legebas</i> , thou didst read.
	preterper.		<i>legisti</i> , thou hast read.
	preterplu.		<i>legeras</i> , thou hadst read.
	future.		<i>leges</i> , thou shalt, or will read.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *lege legito*, read thou.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter.	<i>legas</i> , thou may'st. or canst read.
	preterim.		<i>legeres</i> , thou might'st, or could'st, read.
	preterper.		<i>legeris</i> , thou might'st, would'st, should'st, or ought'st to have read.
	preterplu.		<i>legisses</i> , thou might'st, would'st, should'st, or ought'st to had read.
	future.		<i>legeris</i> , thou may'st, or canst read hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

What are the third Persons Singular of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Ind. Mood.	present T.	Singulariter.	<i>legit</i> , he readeth.
	preterim.		<i>legebat</i> , he did read.
	preterper.		<i>legit</i> , he hath read.
	preterplu.		<i>legerat</i> , he had read.
	future.		<i>leget</i> , he shall, or will read.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *legat legi*
let him read.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Singulariter.	{	<i>legat</i> , he may, or can read.
		preterim.			<i>legeret</i> , he might, or could read.
		preterper.			<i>legerit</i> , he might, would, should, or ought to have read.
		preterplu.			<i>legisset</i> , he might, would, should, or ought to have read.
		future.			<i>legerit</i> , he may, or can read hereafter.

Q. What are the first Persons Plural of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	present T.	Pluraliter.	{	<i>legimus</i> , we read.
		preterim.			<i>legebamus</i> , we did read.
		preterper.			<i>legimus</i> , we have read.
		preterplu.			<i>legeramus</i> , we had read.
		future.			<i>legemus</i> , we shall, or will read.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Plural, *legamus*, let us read.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Pluraliter.	{	<i>legamus</i> , we may, or can read.
		preterim.			<i>legeremus</i> , we might, or could read.
		preterper.			<i>legerimus</i> , we might, would, should, or ought to have read.
		preterplu.			<i>legissemus</i> , we might, would, should, or ought to have read.
		future.			<i>legerimus</i> , we may, or can read hereafter.

legit. 2. What are the second Persons Plural of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Ind. Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	legitis, ye read.
	preterim.		legebatis, ye did read.
	preterper.		legistis, ye have read.
	preterplu.		legeratis, ye had read.
	future.		legetis, ye shall, or will read.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *legite legitote*, read ye.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	legatis, ye may, or can read.
	preterim.		legeretis, ye might, or could read.
	preterper.		legeritis, ye might, would, should, or ought to have read.
	preterplu.		legissetis, ye might, would, should, or ought to had read.
	future.		legeritis, ye may, or can read hereafter.

us re. 2. What are the third Persons Plural of the third Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Ind. Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	legunt, they read.
	preterim.		legebant, they did read.
	preterper.		legerunt, vel ère, they have read.
	preterplu.		legerant, they had read.
	future.		legent, they shall, or will read.

Imperative Mood, *legant legunto*, let them read.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>legant</i> , they may, or can read.
	preterim.		<i>legerent</i> , they might, or could read.
	preterper.		<i>legerint</i> , they might, would should, or ought to have read.
	preterplu.		<i>legissent</i> , they might, would should, or ought to had read.
	future.		<i>legerint</i> , they may, or can read hereafter.

2. What are the first persons Singular of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>audio</i> , I hear.
	preterim.		<i>audiebam</i> , I did hear.
	preterper.		<i>audivi</i> , I have heard.
	preterplu.		<i>audiveram</i> , I had heard.
	future.		<i>audiam</i> , I shall, or will hear.

Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>audiam</i> , I may, or can hear.
	preterim.		<i>audirem</i> , I might, or could hear.
	preterper.		<i>audiverim</i> , I might, would should, or ought to have heard.
	preterplu.		<i>audivissem</i> , I might, would should, or ought to had heard.
	future.		<i>audivero</i> , I may, or can hear hereafter.

Inf. M.	present	<i>audire</i> , to hear.	preterper.	<i>audivisse</i> , to have heard.
	and preterim.		and preterplu.	

Futu

Future, *auditurum esse*, to hear hereafter: Gerunds, *audiendi*, of hearing; *audiendo*, in hearing; *audiendum*, to hear: Supines, *auditum*, to hear; *auditu*, to be heard:
 A Participle of the Present Tense, *audiens*, hearing:
 A Participle of the Future in *rus*, *auditurus*, to hear, or about to hear.

2 What are the second persons Singular of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indicative	present T.	Singulariter	<i>audis</i> , thou hearest.
	preterim.		<i>audiebas</i> , thou didst hear.
	preterper.		<i>audivisti</i> , thou hast heard.
	preterplu.		<i>audiveras</i> , thou hadst heard.
	future.		<i>audies</i> , thou shalt, or wilt hear.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *audi audito*, hear thou.

Imperative	present T.	Singulariter.	<i>audias</i> , thou may'st, or canst hear.
	preterim.		<i>audires</i> , thou might'st, or could'st hear.
	preterper.		<i>audiveris</i> , thou might'st, would'st, should'st, or ought'st to have heard.
	preterplu.		<i>audivisses</i> , thou might'st, would'st, should'st, or ought'st, to had heard.
	future.		<i>audiveris</i> , thou may'st, or can'st hear hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

Q. What are the third persons Singular of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Singulariter.	<i>audit</i>, he heareth. <i>audiebat</i>, he did hear. <i>audiuit</i>, he hath heard. <i>audiverat</i>, he had heard. <i>audiet</i>, he shall, or will hear.
------------	---	---------------	--

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *audiat* and let him hear.

Potential Mood.	present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Singulariter.	<i>audiat</i>, he may, or can hear. <i>audiret</i>, he might, or could hear. <i>audiverit</i>, he might, would should, or ought to have heard. <i>audivisset</i>, he might would should, or ought to have heard. <i>audiverit</i>, he may, or can hear hereafter.
-----------------	---	---------------	--

Q. What are the first persons plural of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter.	<i>audimus</i>, we hear. <i>audiebamus</i>, we did hear. <i>audivimus</i>, we have heard. <i>audiveramus</i>, we had heard. <i>audiemus</i>, we shall, or will hear.
--------------	---	-------------	---

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *audiamus*, let us hear.

Fourth Mood.	Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>audiamus</i> , we may, or can hear.
		preterim.		<i>audiremus</i> , we might, or could hear.
		preterper.		<i>audiverimus</i> we might, would, should, or ought to have heard.
		preterplu.		<i>audiuissimus</i> , we might, would, should, or ought to had heard.
		future.		<i>audiverimus</i> , we may or can hear hereafter.

What are the second persons plural of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Fourth Mood.	Ind. Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>auditis</i> , ye hear.
		preterim.		<i>audiebatis</i> , ye did hear.
		preterper.		<i>audiuistis</i> , ye have heard.
		preterplu.		<i>audiveratis</i> , ye had heard.
		future.		<i>audietis</i> , ye shall, or will hear.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *audite auditote*, hear ye.

Fourth Mood.	Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>auditis</i> , ye may, or can hear.
		preterim.		<i>audiretis</i> , ye might, or could hear.
		preterper.		<i>audiveritis</i> , ye might, would, should, or ought to have heard.
		preterplu.		<i>audiuissetis</i> , ye might, would, should, or ought to had heard.
		future.		<i>audiveritis</i> , ye may, or can hear hereafter.

hear.

s, let

Potent

Q. What are the third persons plural of the fourth Conjugation of the Active Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter	audiunt, they hear.
		preterim.		audiebant, they did hear.
Indic. Mood.	{	preterper.	} Pluraliter	audiuerunt, vel audiuerunt, they have heard.
		preterplu.		audiuerant, they had heard.
		future.		audient, they shall, or will hear.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *audiant*, let them hear.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter	audiant, they may, or can hear.
		preterim.		audirent, they might, or could hear.
Potential Mood.	{	preterper.	} Pluraliter	audiverint, they might, would should, or ought to have heard.
		preterplu.		audivissent, they might, would should, or ought to have heard.
		future.		audiverint, they may, or can hear hereafter.

Finis Verborum Activorum Formationis.

Q. WHAT Verbs must we learn to decline, before we can decline Verbs in (or)?

A. We must learn to decline this Verb (*sum*)

Q. Why so?

A. Because Verbs in *or* have no Preterperfect Tenses, nor Preterpluperfect Tenses of the Indicative Mood; nor Preterperfect, nor Preterpluperfect, nor Future Tenses of the Potential, Optative, Subjunctive, or Infinitive Moods of their own, but are supplied by the later Supines, or rather by the Participle or the preterperfect Tense, and the Verb *sum*, in those several Tenses.

Q. How do you decline the Verb (*sum*)?

A. *Sum, es, fui, esse, futurus.*

Q. What

What are the first persons Singular of Sum throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	sum, I am.
	Preterim.		eram, I was.
	Preterper.		fui, I have been.
	Preterplu.		fueram, I had been.
	Future		ero, I shall, or will be.

Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singular.	sim, I may, or can be.
	Preterim.		essem, I might, or could be.
	Preterper.		fuerim, I might, could, should, or ought to have been.
	Preterplu.		fuissem, I might, could, should, or ought to had been.
	Future T.		fuiro, I may, or can be hereafter.

Infinit.	Present and Preterim.	esse, to be	Preterperf. and Preterplu.	fuisse,	{ to have, or had been.
----------	-----------------------	-------------	----------------------------	---------	-------------------------

Future, fore vel futurum esse, to be hereafter.

What are the second Persons Singular of Sum, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	es, thou art.
	Preterim.		eras, thou wast.
	Preterper.		fuisti, thou hast been.
	Preterplu.		fueras, thou hadst been.
	Future.		eris, thou shalt, or will be.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, sis, es, esse, be thou.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>sis</i> , thou may'st, or canst be.
	Preterim.		<i>esses</i> , thou might'st, or couldst be.
	Preterper.		<i>fuëris</i> , thou might'st, couldst should'st, or ought'st have been.
	Preterplu.		<i>fuiſſes</i> , thou might'st, couldst should'st, or ought'st had been.
	Future.		<i>fuëris</i> , thou may'st, or canst be hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. What are the third Persons Singular of Sum, through out all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>eſt</i> , he is.
	Preterim.		<i>erat</i> , he was.
	Preterper.		<i>fuit</i> , he hath been.
	Preterplu.		<i>fuërat</i> , he had been.
	Future.		<i>erit</i> , he ſhall, or will be.

Imperative Mood Present Tenſe Singular, *ſit eſto*, be he.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>ſit</i> , he may, or can be.
	preterim.		<i>eſſet</i> , he might, or could be.
	preterper.		<i>fuërit</i> , he might, could, should, ought to have been.
	preterplu.		<i>fuiſſet</i> , he might, could, should, ought to had been.
	future.		<i>fuërit</i> , he may, or can be hereafter.

2. What

2. What are the first Persons Plural of Sum, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.	Pluraliter	sumus, we are.
		eramus, we were.
		fuius, we have been.
		fueramus, we had been.
		erimus, we shall, or will be.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *simus*, be we.

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter	<i>simus</i> , we may, or can be.
		<i>essemus</i> , we might, or could be.
		<i>fuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been.
		<i>fuissemus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been.
		<i>fuerimus</i> , we may, or can be hereafter.

2. What are the second Persons Plural of sum, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter	<i>estis</i> , ye are.
		<i>eratis</i> , ye might, or could be.
		<i>fuiſtis</i> , ye have been.
		<i>fueratis</i> , ye had been.
		<i>eritis</i> , ye shall, or will be.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ſitis eſſe eſtote*, be ye.

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter	<i>ſitis</i> , ye may, or can be.
		<i>eſſetis</i> , ye might, or could be.
		<i>fueritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been.
		<i>ſuiſſetis</i> , ye might could, should, or ought to had been.
		<i>fueritis</i> , ye may, or can be hereafter.

2. What

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of Sum, through all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter	sunt, they are.
		preterim.		erant, they were.
		preterper.		fuêrunt, vel fuêre, they have been.
		preterplu.		fuerant, they had been.
		future.		fuerunt, they shall, or will be.

Imperative Mood present Tense plural, sint sunt, be thou

Potent. Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter	sint, they may, or can be.
		preterim.		essent, they might or could be.
		preterper.		fuerint, they might, could, should, or ought to have been.
		preterplu.		fuisse, they might, could, should, or ought to have been.
		future.		fuerint, they may, or can be hereafter.

Of VERBS in or.

Q. HOW many Conjugations of Verbs in or are there?

A. Four.

Q. What is the Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs in or?

A. Amor, I am loved.

Q. How is amor declined?

A. Amor, amaris vel amare, amatus sum vel fui, amatus, amandus, to be loved.

Q. What is the Example of the second Conjugation of Verbs in or?

A. Doceor, I am taught.

Q. How is doceor declined?

A. Doceor, docêris vel docêre, doctus sum vel fui, docti, doctus, docendus, to be taught.

Q. W

What is the Example of the third Conjugation of Verbs in or?

A. Legor, I am read.

How do you decline legor?

A. Legor, legeris vel legere, lectus sum vel fui, legi, lectus, legendus, to be read.

What is the Example of the fourth Conjugation of Verbs in or?

A. Audior, I am heard.

How do you decline audior?

A. Audior, audiris vel audire, auditus sum vel fui, audiri, auditus, audiendus, to be heard.

The forming of VERBS in or.

WHAT are the first Persons Singular of Verbs in or, of the first Conjugation throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Mood	present T.	Singulariter	<i>amor, I am loved.</i>
	preterim.		<i>amabar, I was loved.</i>
	preterper.		<i>amatus sum vel fui, I have been loved.</i>
	preterplu.		<i>amatus eram vel fueram, I had been loved.</i>
	future.		<i>amabor, I shall or will be loved.</i>

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential	present T.	Singulariter	<i>amer, I may or can be loved.</i>
	preterim.		<i>amarer, I might, or could be loved.</i>
	preterper.		<i>amatus sim vel fuerim, I might, could, should, or ought to have been loved.</i>
	preterplu.		<i>amatus essem vel fuisset, I might, could, should, or ought to had been loved.</i>
	future.		<i>amatus ero vel fuer, I may or can be loved hereafter.</i>

Pres.

Infinitive Mood. Pres. and Preterim. *amari*, to be loved
 Preterper. and Preterplu. *amatum esse velfuisse*, to have
 or had been loved.

Future, *amatum iri vel amandum esse*, to be loved here
 after; a Participle of the Present Tense, *amatus*, loved
 a Participle of the Future in *dus*, *amandus*, to be loved

Q. What are the second Persons Singular of Verbs in or
 the first Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	Singulariter	{	<i>amaris vel amare</i> , thou art loved.
		preterim.			<i>amabaris, vel amabare</i> , thou wast loved.
		preterper.			<i>amatus es vel fuisti</i> , thou hast been loved.
		preterplu.			<i>amatus eras vel fueras</i> , thou wast been loved.
		future.			<i>amaberis vel amabere</i> , thou shalt or wilt be loved.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *amare amatus*
 be thou loved.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Singulariter	{	<i>ameris vel amere</i> , thou may'st, canst be loved.
		preterim.			<i>amareris vel amarere</i> , thou might'st, or could'st be loved.
		preterper.			<i>amatus sis vel fueris</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st, ought'st to have been loved.
		preterplu.			<i>amatus esses vel fuisses</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st, ought'st to had been loved.
		future.			<i>amatus eris vel fueris</i> , thou may'st, or canst be loved hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

What are the third Persons Singular of Verbs in or of first Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

present T.	Singulariter	<i>amatur</i> , he is loved.
preterim.		<i>amabatur</i> , he was loved.
preterper.		<i>amatus est vel fuit</i> , he hath been loved.
preterplu.		<i>amatus erat vel fuerat</i> , he had been loved.
future.		<i>amabitur</i> , he shall, or will be loved.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *ametur* ama-
let him be loved.

present T.	Singulariter	<i>ametur</i> , he may or can be loved.
preterim.		<i>amaretur</i> , he might, or could be loved.
preterper.		<i>amatus sit vel fuerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have been loved.
preterplu.		<i>amatus esset vel fuisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to had been loved.
future.		<i>amatus erit vel fuerit</i> , he may, or can be loved hereafter.

2. What

Q. What are the first Persons Plural of Verbs in or of first Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>amamur</i> , we are loved.
		preterim.		<i>amabamur</i> , we were loved.
		preterper.		<i>amati sumus vel fuimus</i> , we have been loved.
		preterplu.		<i>amati essemus vel fueramus</i> , we had been loved.
		future.		<i>amabimur</i> , we shall, or will be loved.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *amemur*, let us be loved.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>amemur</i> , we may or can be loved.
		preterim.		<i>amaremur</i> , we might, or could be loved.
		preterper.		<i>amati simus vel fuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been loved.
		preterplu.		<i>amati essemus vel fuissetmus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been loved.
		future.		<i>amati erimus vel fuerimus</i> , we may, or can be loved hereafter.

Q. What are the second Persons Plural of Verbs in or of first Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>amamini</i> , ye are loved.
		preterim.		<i>amabamini</i> , ye were loved.
		preterper.		<i>amati estis vel fuistis</i> , ye have been loved.
		preterplu.		<i>amati eratis vel fueratis</i> , ye had been loved.
		future.		<i>amabimini</i> , ye shall, or will be loved.

Imperative

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *amemini, amemini*, be ye loved.

Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>amemini</i> , ye may, or can be loved.
Preterim.		<i>amaremini</i> , ye might, or could be loved.
Preterper.		<i>amati sitis vel fueritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been loved.
Preterplu.		<i>amati essetis vel fuissetis</i> , ye might, would, should or ought to had been loved.
Future.		<i>amabuntur</i> , they shall, or will be loved.

What are the third Persons Plural of Verbs in or of the first Conjugation throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>amantur</i> , they are loved.
Preterim.		<i>amabantur</i> , they were loved.
Preterper.		<i>amati sunt, fuêrunt, vel fuêre</i> , they have been loved.
Preterplu.		<i>amati erant vel fuerant</i> , they had been loved.
Future.		<i>amabuntur</i> , they shall or will be loved.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *amentor amantur*, let them be loved.

Potential

Potential Mood.	Present Ten.	Pluraliter	<i>amentur</i> , they may, or can be loved.
	Preterimp.		<i>amarentur</i> , they might, or could be loved.
	Preterper.		<i>amati sint vel fuerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been loved.
	Preterplu.		<i>amati essent vel fuissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been loved.
	Future.		<i>amati erunt vel fuerint</i> , they may, or can be loved hereafter.

Q. What are the first Persons Singular of Verbs in or of the second Conjugation throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter	<i>doceor</i> , I am taught.
	Preterim.		<i>docebar</i> , I was taught.
	Preterper.		<i>doctus sum vel fui</i> , I have been taught.
	Preterplu.		<i>doctus eram vel fueram</i> , I had been taught.
	Future.		<i>docebor</i> , I shall, or will be taught.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>docear</i> , I may, or can be taught.
	preterim.		<i>doceberer</i> , I might or could be taught.
	preterper.		<i>doctus sim vel fuerim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been taught.
	preterplu.		<i>doctus essem vel fuissem</i> , I might, could, should or ought to have been taught.
	future.		<i>doctus ero vel fuero</i> , I may, or can be taught hereafter.

Infinitive

Infinitive	Present	{	<i>doceri,</i>	{	Preterper.	{	<i>doctum esse vel</i>
	and		to be		and		<i>fuisse,</i> to have or
	Preterim.		taught.		Preterplu.		had been taught.

Future, *doctum iri vel docendum esse*, to be taught hereafter; a Participle of the Preter Tense, *doctus*, taught; a Participle of the Future in *us*, *docendus*, to be taught.

What are the second Persons Singular of Verbs in *or*, of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indicative Mood.	present T.	{	Singulariter	{	<i>docêris vel docêre,</i> thou art taught.
	preterim.				<i>docebaris vel docebare,</i> thou wast taught.
	preterper.				<i>doctus es vel fuisti,</i> thou hast been taught.
	preterplu.				<i>doctus eras vel fueras,</i> thou hadst been taught.
	future.				<i>doceberis vel docebere,</i> thou shalt, or wilt be taught.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *docere docetor*, be thou taught.

Potential

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>docearis vel doceare</i> , thou may'st, canst be taught.
	preterim.		<i>docereris vel docerere</i> , thou might'st or could'st be taught.
	preterper.		<i>doctus sis vel fueris</i> , thou might'st, should'st, or ought'st have been taught.
	preterplu.		<i>doctus esses vel fuisses</i> , thou might'st, should'st, or ought'st had been taught.
	future.		<i>doctus eris vel fueris</i> , thou may'st or canst be taught hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons singular of Verbs in the second Conjugation throughout all Moods and Tenses.

Indic. Mood.	present T.	Singulariter.	<i>docetur</i> , he is taught.
	preterim.		<i>docebatur</i> , he was taught.
	preterper.		<i>doctus est vel fuit</i> , he hath been taught.
	preterplu.		<i>doctus erat vel fuerat</i> , he had been taught.
	future.		<i>docebitur</i> , he shall, or will be taught.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *doceatur* let him be taught.

present T.	Singulariter	<i>doceatur</i> , he may, or can be taught.
preterim.		<i>doceretur</i> , he might, or could be taught.
preterper.		<i>doctus sit vel fuerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought, to have been taught.
preterplu.		<i>doctus esset vel fuisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to had been taught.
future.		<i>doctus erit vel fuerit</i> , he may, or can be taught hereafter.

What are the first Persons Plural of Verbs in or of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T.	Pluraliter	<i>docemur</i> , we are taught.
preterim.		<i>docebamur</i> , we were taught.
preterper.		<i>docti sumus vel fuimus</i> , we have been taught.
preterplu.		<i>docti eramus vel fueramus</i> , we had been taught.
future.		<i>docebimur</i> , we shall, or will be taught.

The Imperative Mood Present Tense Plural, *doceamur*, let us be taught.

present T.	Pluraliter	<i>doceamur</i> , we may, or can be taught.
preterim.		<i>doceremur</i> , we might, or could be taught.
preterper.		<i>docti simus vel fuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been taught.
preterplu.		<i>docti essemus vel fuissemus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been taught.
future.		<i>docti erimus vel fuerimus</i> , we may, or can be taught hereafter.

2 What

2. What are the second Persons Plural of Verbs in or, of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter	<i>docemini</i> , ye are taught.
		preterim.		<i>docebamini</i> , ye were taught.
		preterper.		<i>docti estis vel fuistis</i> , ye have been taught.
		preterplu.		<i>docti eratis vel fueratis</i> , ye had been taught.
		future.		<i>docebimini</i> , ye shall, or will be taught.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *docemini doceminor*, be ye taught.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter.	<i>doceamini</i> , ye may, or can be taught.
		preterimper.		<i>doceremini</i> , ye might, or could be taught.
		preterperf.		<i>docti sitis vel fueritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been taught.
		preterplu.		<i>docti essetis vel fuissetis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been taught.
		future.		<i>docti eritis vel fueritis</i> , ye may, or can be taught hereafter.

2. What are the third Persons Plural of Verbs in or, of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	{	Present.	} Pluraliter	<i>docentur</i> , they are taught.
		Preterim.		<i>docebantur</i> , they were taught.
		Preterper.		<i>docti sunt fuerunt vel fuere</i> , they have been taught.
		Preterplu.		<i>docti erant vel fuerant</i> , they had been taught.
		Future.		<i>docebuntur</i> , they shall, or will be taught.

Imperative

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *doceantur docentor*, let them be taught.

Potential Mood.	{	Present T.	{	<i>doceantur</i> , they may, or can be taught.
		Preterim.		<i>docerentur</i> , they might, or could be taught.
		Preterper.		<i>docti sint vel fuerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been taught.
		Preterplu.		<i>docti essent vel fuissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to had been taught.
		Future.		<i>docti erint vel fuerint</i> , they may, or can be taught hereafter.
			Pluraliter	

Q. What are the first Persons Singular of Verbs in or, of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Ind. Mood.	{	Present T.	{	<i>legor</i> I am read.
		Preterim.		<i>legebar</i> , I was read.
		Preterper.		<i>lectus sum vel fui</i> , I have been read.
		Preterplu.		<i>lectus eram vel fueram</i> , I had been read.
		Future.		<i>legar</i> , I shall, or will read.
			Singulariter	

The Imperative wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter	{	<i>legar</i> , I may, or can be read.
				<i>legerer</i> , I might, or could be read.
				<i>lectus sim vel fuerim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
	Preterplu.			<i>lectus essem vel fuisset</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
	Future.			<i>lectus ero vel fuero</i> , I may, or can be read hereafter.

Infinitive Mood.

present.	{	<i>legi</i> ,	{	to be	{	preterper.	{	<i>lectum</i>	{	to have
and preterim.				read.		and preterplu.		<i>esse vel fuisse.</i>		or had been read

Future, *lectum iri, vel legendum esse*, to be read hereafter;
 a Participle of the Preterperfect Tense, *lectus*, read;
 Participle of the Future in *dus, legendus*, to be read.

Q. What are the second Persons Singular, of Verbs in or of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter	{	<i>legeris, vel legere</i> , thou art read.
	Preterim.			<i>legebaris vel legebare</i> , thou wast read.
	Preterper.			<i>lectus es vel fuisti</i> , thou hast been read.
	Preterplu.			<i>lectus eras vel fueras</i> , thou hadst been read.
	Future.			<i>legêris vel legêre</i> , thou shalt, or wilt be read.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *legitor*, be thou read.

Present

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter	<i>legaris vel legare</i> , thou may'st, or canst be read.
	Preterim.		<i>legereris vel legerere</i> , thou might'st, or could'st be read.
	Preterper.		<i>lectus sis vel fueris</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to have been read.
	Preterplu.		<i>lectus esses vel fuisses</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to had been read.
	Future.		<i>lectus eris vel fueris</i> , thou may'st, or canst be read hereafter.

2. What are the third Persons Singular of Verbs in or, of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter	<i>legitur</i> , he is read.
	Preterim.		<i>legebatur</i> , he was read.
	Preterper.		<i>lectus est vel fuit</i> , he hath been read.
	Preterplu.		<i>lectus erat vel fuerat</i> , he had been read.
	Future.		<i>legetur</i> , he shall, or will be read.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *legatur legitor*, let him be read.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>legatur</i> , he may, or can be read
	preterim.		<i>legeretur</i> , he might, or could be read.
	preterper.		<i>lectus sit vel fuerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
	preterplu.		<i>lectus esset vel fuisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to had been read.
	future.		<i>lectus, erit vel fuerit</i> , he may, or can be read hereafter.

Q. What are the first Persons Plural of Verbs in or of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>legimur</i> , we are read.
	preterim.		<i>legebatur</i> , we were read.
	preterper.		<i>lecti sumus vel fuimus</i> , we have been read.
	preterplu.		<i>lecti eramus vel fueramus</i> , we had been read.
	future.		<i>legemur</i> , we shall, or will be read.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *legantur*, let us be read.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>legamur</i> , we may, or can be read.
	preterim.		<i>legeremur</i> , we might, or could be read.
	preterper.		<i>lecti simus vel fuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
	preterplu.		<i>lecti essemus vel fuissetus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been read.
	future.		<i>lecti erimus vel fuerimus</i> , we may, or can be read hereafter.

Q. What are the second Persons Plural of Verbs in or of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>legimini</i> , ye are read.
	preterim.		<i>legebamini</i> , ye were read.
	preterper.		<i>lecti estis vel fuistis</i> , ye have been read.
	preterplu.		<i>lecti eratis vel fueratis</i> , ye had been read.
	future.		<i>legemini</i> , ye shall, or will be read.

Imperative

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *legimini legimini*, be ye read.

Potential	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>legimini</i> , ye may, or can be read.
	preterim.		<i>legeremini</i> , ye might, or could be read.
	preterper.		<i>lecti sitis vel fueritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
	preterplu.		<i>lecti essetis vel fuissetis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to had been read.
	future.		<i>lecti eritis vel fueritis</i> , ye may, or can be read hereafter.

2. What are the third Persons Plural of Verbs in or of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>leguntur</i> , they are read.
	preterim.		<i>legebantur</i> , they were read.
	preterper.		<i>lecti sunt fuerunt vel fuere</i> , they have been read.
	preterplu.		<i>lecti erant vel fuerant</i> , they had been read.
	future.		<i>legentur</i> , they shall, or will be read.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *legantur leguntur*, let them be read.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>legantur</i> , they may, or can be read.
		preterim.		<i>legerentur</i> , they might, or could be read.
		preterper.		<i>lecti sint vel fuerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
		preterplu.		<i>lecti essent vel fuissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been read.
		future.		<i>lecti erunt vel fuerint</i> , they may, or can be read here after.
			Pluraliter	

Q. What are the first Persons Singular of Verbs in or of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>audior</i> , I am heard.
		preterim.		<i>audiebar</i> , I was heard.
		preterper.		<i>auditus sum vel fui</i> , I have been heard.
		preterplu.		<i>auditus eram vel fueram</i> , I had been heard.
		future.		<i>audiar</i> , I shall, or will be heard.
			Singular.	

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potentia

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>audiar</i> , I may, or can be heard.
	preterim.		<i>audirer</i> , I might, or could be heard.
	preterper.		<i>auditus sim vel fuerim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been heard.
	preterplu.		<i>auditus essem vel fuisset</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been heard.
	future.		<i>auditus ero vel fuero</i> , I may, or can be heard hereafter.

Infinitive Mood. Pres. and Preterim. *audiri*, to be heard, Preterper. and Preterplu. *auditum esse vel fuisse*, to have, or had been heard.

Future Tense, *auditum iri vel audiendum esse*, to be heard hereafter; a Participle of the Preterperfect Tense, *auditus*, heard: a Participle of the Future in *dus*, *audiendus*, to be heard.

What are the second Persons Singular of Verbs in or of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>audiris vel audire</i> , thou art heard.
	preterim.		<i>audiebaris vel audiebare</i> , thou wast heard.
	preterper.		<i>auditus es vel fuisti</i> , thou hast been heard.
	preterplu.		<i>auditus eras vel fueras</i> , thou hadst been heard.
	future.		<i>audieris vel audiere</i> , thou shalt, or wilt be heard.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *audire auditor*,
be thou heard.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>audiaris vel audiare</i> , thou
		preterim.		may'st, or canst be heard.
		preterper		<i>audireris vel audirere</i> , thou
				might'st, or could'st be heard.
		preterplu.		<i>auditus sis vel fueris</i> , thou
			Singulariter.	might'st, could'd, should'st,
				or ought'st to have been
				heard.
		future.		<i>auditus esses vel fuisses</i> , thou
				might'st, could'st, should'st,
				or ought'st, to had been
				heard.
				<i>auditus eris vel fueris</i> , thou
				may'st, or canst be heard.
				hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons Singular of Verbs in or of
the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?
A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>auditur</i> , he is heard.
		preterim.		<i>audiebatur</i> , he was heard.
		preterper.		<i>auditus est vel fuit</i> , he hath been
				heard.
		preterpu.		<i>auditus erat vel fuerat</i> , he had been
			Singulariter	heard.
		future.		<i>audietur</i> , he shall, or will be heard.

Imperative

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *audiatur audi-*
tor, let him be heard.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>audiatur</i> , he may, or can be heard.
		preterim.		<i>audiretur</i> , he might, or could be heard.
		preterper.		<i>auditus sit vel fuerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have been heard.
		preterplu.		<i>audits esset vel fuisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought, to had been heard.
		future.		<i>auditus erit vel fuerit</i> , he may, or can be heard hereafter.
			Singulariter.	

Q. What are the first Persons Plural of Verbs in or of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

{	present T.	{	<i>audimur</i> , we are heard.
	preterim.		<i>audiebamur</i> , we were heard.
	preterper.		<i>auditi sumus vel fuimus</i> , we have been heard.
	preterplu.		<i>auditi eramus vel fueramus</i> , we had been heard.
	future.		<i>audiemur</i> , we shall, or will be heard.
		Singulariter	

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *audiamur*, let us be heard.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>audiamur</i> , we may, or can be heard.
		preterim.		<i>audiremur</i> , we might, or could be heard.
		preterper.		<i>auditi simus vel fuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been heard.
		preterplu.		<i>auditi essemus vel fuissetus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been heard.
		future.		<i>auditi erimus vel fuerimus</i> , we may, or can be heard here after.
			Pluraliter	

Q. What are the second Persons Plural of Verbs in or the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>audimini</i> , ye are heard.
		preterim.		<i>audiebamini</i> , ye were heard.
		preterper.		<i>auditi estis vel fuistis</i> , ye have been heard.
		preterplu.		<i>auditi eratis vel fueratis</i> , ye had been heard.
		future.		<i>audiemini</i> , ye shall, or will be heard.
			Pluraliter	

Imperative

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *audimini audimini*, be ye heard.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>audimini</i> , ye may, or can be heard.
	preterim.		<i>audiremini</i> , ye might, or could be heard.
	preterper.		<i>auditi sitis vel fueritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been heard.
	preterplu.		<i>auditi essetis vel fuissetis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to had been heard.
	future.		<i>auditi eritis vel fueritis</i> , ye may, or can be heard hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of Verbs in or of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>audiuntur</i> , they are heard.
	preterim.		<i>audiebantur</i> , they were heard
	preterper.		<i>auditi sunt fuerunt vel fuere</i> , they have been heard.
	preterplu.		<i>auditi erant vel fuerant</i> , they had been heard.
	future.		<i>audientur</i> , they shall, or will be heard.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *audiantur audiuntur*, let them be heard.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>audiantur</i> , they may or can be heard.
	preterim.		<i>audirentur</i> , they might, or could be heard.
	preterper.		<i>auditi sint vel fuerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been heard.
	preterplu.		<i>auditi essent vel fuissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been heard.
	future.		<i>auditi erunt vel fuerunt</i> , they may, or can be heard hereafter.

In forming of Verbs of the Active and Passive Voice together, you are to Note, that the Letter *p.* stands for Present Tense; *pr.* for Preterimperfect Tense; *pre.* for Preterperfect; *pret.* for Preterpluperfect; and *fu.* for Future Tense.

Q. What are the first Persons Singular of the Active and Passive Voice throughout all Moods and Tenses, of Verbs of the first Conjugation?

A.

	Active.	Passive.
Indic. Mood.	<i>p. amo.</i>	<i>amor.</i>
	<i>pr. amabam.</i>	<i>amabar.</i>
	<i>pre. amavi.</i>	<i>amatus sum vel fui.</i>
	<i>pret. amaveram.</i>	<i>amatus eram vel fueram.</i>
	<i>fu. amabo.</i>	<i>amabor.</i>

The Imperative Moods want the first Persons Singular.

Potential	<i>p. amem.</i>	<i>amer.</i>	Infinitive
	<i>pr. amarem.</i>	<i>amarer.</i>	
	<i>pre. amaverim.</i>	<i>amatus sim vel fuerim.</i>	
	<i>pret. amavissem.</i>	<i>amatus essem vel fuissem.</i>	
	<i>fu. amabo.</i>	<i>amatus ero vel fuero.</i>	

*Active.**Passive.**p. & pr. amare.*

amari.

pre. & pret. amavisse.

amatum esse vel fuisse.

*fu. amaturum esse.*amatum iri, vel amandum
esse.*Ger. amandi, do, dum.**sup. amatum, tu,**participle of the p.*

amans.

of the fu. in rus,

amaturus.

participle of the pre.

amatus.

of the fu. in dus,

amandus.

2. *What are the second persons singular of the Active and Passive Voice throughout all Moods and Tenses, of Verbs of the first Conjugation?*

p. amas.

amaris vel amare.

pr. amabas.

amabaris vel bare.

pre. amavisti.

amatus es vel fuisti.

pret. amaveras.

amatus eras vel fueras.

fu. amabis.

amaberis vel bere.

Imp. ama amato.

amare amator.

p. ames.

ameris vel amere.

pr. amares.

amareris vel amarere.

pre. amaveris.

amatus sis vel fueris.

pret. amavisses.

amatus esses vel fuisses.

fu. amaveris.

amatus eris vel fueris.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. *What are the third persons Singular of the Active and Passive Voice, throughout all Moods and Tenses, of Verbs of the first Conjugation?*

p. amat.

amatur.

pr. amabat.

amabatur.

pre. amavit.

amatus est vel fuit.

pret. amaverat.

amatus erat vel fuerat.

fu. amabit.

amabitur.

Imp.

*Active.**Passive.**Imp.* amet amato.

ametur amator.

Potential {
 p. amet.
 pr. amaret.
 pre. amaverit.
 pret. amavisset.
 fu. amaverit.

ametur.
 amaretur.
 amatus sit vel fuerit.
 amatus esset vel fuisset.
 amatus erit vel fuerit.

Q. *What are the first Persons Plural of the Active and Passive Voice throughout all Moods and Tenses, of Verbs of the first Conjugation.*

A.

Indic. {
 p. amamus.
 pr. amabamus.
 pre. amavimus.
 pret. amaveramus.
 fu. amabimus.
Imp. amemus.

amamur.
 amabamur.
 amati sumus vel fuerimus.
 amati eramus vel fueramus.
 amabimur.
 amemur.

Potential {
 p. amemus.
 pr. amaremus.
 pre. amaverimus.
 pret. amavissemus.
 fu. amaverimus.

amemur.
 amaremur.
 amati simus vel fuerimus.
 amati essemus vel fuissemus.
 amati erimus vel fuerimus.

Q. *What are the second Persons Plural of the Active and Passive Voice throughout all Moods and Tenses, of Verbs of the first Conjugation?*

A.

Indic. {
 p. amatis.
 pr. amabatis.
 pre. amavistis.
 pret. amaveratis.
 fu. amabitis.
Imp. amate amatote.

amamini.
 amabamini.
 amati estis vel fuistis.
 amati eratis vel fueratis.
 amabimini.
 amemini ameminor.

Potential {
 p. ametis.
 pr. amaretis.
 pre. amaveritis.
 pret. amavissetis.
 fu. amaveritis.

amemini.
 amaremini.
 amati sitis vel fueritis.
 amati essetis vel fuissetis.
 amati eritis vel fueritis.

Q. *What*

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of the Active and Passive Voice throughout all Moods and Tenses, of Verbs of the first Conjugation?

Active.

Passive.

Indic. { p. amant.
pr. amabant.
pre. amaverunt vel.
amavere.
pret. amaverant.
fu. amabunt.

amantur.
amabantur.
amati sunt, fuerunt vel
fuere.
amati erant vel fuerant.
amabuntur.

Imp. ament amanto

amentur amantor.

Potential { p. ament.
pr. amarent.
pre. amaverint.
pret. amavissent.
fu. amaverint.

amentur.
amarentur.
amati sint vel fuerint.
amati essent vel fuissent.
amati erunt vel fuerint.

Q. What are the first persons Singular of the Active and Passive Voice Verbs of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. { p. doceo.
pr. docebam.
pre. docui.
pret. docueram.
fu. docebo.

doceor.
docebar.
doctus sum vel fui.
doctus eram vel fueram.
docebor.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential { p. doceam.
pr. docerem.
pre. docuerim.
pret. docuissem.
fu. docuero.

docear.
docerer.
doctus sim vel fuerim.
doctus essem vel fuissem.
doctus ero vel fuero.

Infinitive.

	<i>Active.</i>	<i>Passive.</i>
Infinitive Mood.	<i>p. & pr.</i> docere.	doceri.
	<i>pre. & pret.</i> docuisse.	doctum esse vel fuisse.
	<i>fu.</i> docturum-esse.	doctumiri vel docendum esse.
	<i>ger.</i> docendi, do, dum.	
	<i>sup.</i> doctum, tu.	
	part. of the <i>p.</i> docens.	part. of the <i>pre.</i> doctus.
	part. of the <i>fu.</i> in rus, docturus.	part. of the <i>fu.</i> in dus, docendus.

Q. *What are the Second persons Singular of the Active and Passive Voice throughout all Moods and Tenses, of Verbs of the Second Conjugation ?*

A.

Indic.	<i>p.</i> doces.	doceris vel docere.
	<i>pr.</i> docebas.	docebaris vel bare.
	<i>pre.</i> docuisti.	doctus es vel fuisti.
	<i>pret.</i> docueras.	doctus eras vel fueras.
	<i>fu.</i> docebis.	doceberis vel bere.

Imp. doce doceto.

docere docetor.

Potential	<i>p.</i> doceas.	docearis vel doceare.
	<i>pr.</i> doceres.	docereris vel rere.
	<i>pre.</i> docueris.	doctus sis vel fueris.
	<i>pret.</i> docuisses.	doctus esses vel fuisses.
	<i>fu.</i> docueris.	doctus eris vel fueris.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

Q. *What are the third Persons Singular of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the Second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	<i>p.</i> docet.	docetur.
	<i>pr.</i> docebat.	docebatur.
	<i>pre.</i> docuit.	doctus est vel fuit.
	<i>pret.</i> docuerat.	doctus erat vel fuerat.
	<i>fu.</i> docebit.	docebitur.

Imp.

*Active.**Passive.**Imp.* doceat, doceto.

doceatur docetor.

Potential
 { p. doceat.
 pr. doceret.
 pre. docuerit.
 pret. docuisset.
 fu. docuerit.

doceatur.
 doceretur.
 doctus sit vel fuerit.
 doctus esset vel fuisset.
 doctus erit vel fuerit.

2. What are the first persons plural of the Active and Passive Voice of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Ind. Mood.
 { p. docemus.
 pr. docebamus.
 pre. docuimus.
 pret. docueramus.
 fu. docebimus.

docemur.
 docebamur.
 docti sumus vel fuimus.
 docti eramus vel fueramus.
 docebimur.

Imp. doceamus.

doceamur.

Potential
 { p. doceamus.
 pr. doceremus.
 pre. docuerimus.
 pret. docuissimus.
 fu. docuerimus.

doceamur.
 doceremur.
 docti simus vel fuerimus.
 docti essemus vel fuissimus.
 docti erimus vel fuerimus.

What are the second persons plural of the Active and Passive Voice of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Ind. Mood.
 { p. docetis.
 pr. docebatis.
 pre. docuistis.
 pret. docueratis.
 fu. docebitis.

docemini.
 docebamini.
 docti estis vel fuistis.
 docti eratis vel fueratis.
 docebimini.
 docemini doceminor.

Imp. docete docetote,

Potential

*Active.**Passive.*

Potential	{	<i>p.</i> doceatis.	doceamini.
		<i>pr.</i> doceretis.	doceremini.
		<i>pre.</i> docueritis.	docti sitis vel fueritis.
		<i>pret.</i> docuissetis.	docti essetis vel fuissetis.
		<i>fu.</i> docueritis.	docti eritis vel fueritis.

Q. *What are the third persons plural of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the second Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	<i>p.</i> docent.	docentur.
		<i>pr.</i> docebant.	docebantur.
		<i>pre.</i> docuerunt vel docuere.	docti sunt fuerunt vel fuerant.
		<i>pret.</i> docuerant.	docti erant vel fuerant.
		<i>fu.</i> docebunt.	docebuntur.
		<i>Imp.</i> doceant docento.	doceantor, docentur.

Potential	{	<i>p.</i> doceant	doceantur.
		<i>pr.</i> docerent.	docerentur.
		<i>pre.</i> docuerint.	docti sint vel fuerint.
		<i>pret.</i> docuissent.	docti essent vel fuissent.
		<i>fu.</i> docuerint.	docti erunt vel fuerint.

Q. *What are the first persons plural in the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	<i>p.</i> lego.	legor.
		<i>pr.</i> legebam.	legebar.
		<i>pre.</i> legi.	lectus sum vel fui.
		<i>pret.</i> legeram.	lectus eram vel fueram.
		<i>fu.</i> legam.	legar.

Imperative Moods wants the first Person Singular.

Potential	{	<i>p.</i> legam.	legar.
		<i>pr.</i> legerem.	legerer.
		<i>pre.</i> legerim.	lectus sim vel fuerim.
		<i>pret.</i> legissem.	lectus essem vel fuissem.
		<i>fu.</i> legero.	lectus ero vel fuero.

Infinitive

Active.

Passive.

p. & pr. legere.
pre. & pret. legisse.
fu. lecturum esse.
ger. legendi, do, dum.
sup. lectum, tu.
part. p. legens.
part. fu. in rus, lecturus.

legi.
lectum esse vel fuisse.
lectum iri vel legendum esse.
part. pre. lectus.
part. fu. in dus, legendus.

2. What are the second persons singular of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

p. legis.
pr. legebas.
pre. legisti.
pret. legeras.
fu. leges.

legeris vel legere.
legebaris vel bare.
lectus es vel fuisti.
lectus eras vel fueras.
legeris vel legere.

Imp. lege legito.

legere legitor.

p. legas.
pr. legeres.
pre. legeris.
pret. legisses.
fu, legeris.

legaris vel legare.
legereris vel rere.
lectus sis vel fueris.
lectus esses vel fuisses.
lectus eris vel fueris.

The Infinitive Moods are always the same.

2. What are the third persons singular of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

p. legit.
pr. legebat.
pre, legit.
pret. legerat.
fu. leget.

legitur.
legebatur.
lectus est vel fuit.
lectus erat vel fuerat.
legetur.
legatur legitor.

Imp. legat legito.

Potential

*Active.**Passive.*

Potential { *p.* legat.
pr. legeret.
pre. legerit.
pret. legisset.
fu. legerit.

legatur.
 legeretur.
 lectus sit vel fuerit.
 lectus esset vel fuisset.
 lectus erit vel fuerit.

Q. *What are the first persons plural of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. { *p.* legimus.
pr. legebamus.
pre. legimus.
pret. legeramus.
fu. legemus.

legimur.
 legebamur.
 lecti sumus vel fuimus.
 lecti eramus vel fueramus.
 legemur.

Imp. legamus.

legamur.

Potential { *p.* legamus.
pr. legeremus.
pre. legerimus.
pret. legissemus.
fu. legerimus.

legamur.
 legeremur.
 lecti simus vel fuerimus.
 lecti essemus vel fuissemus.
 lecti erimus vel fuerimus.

Q. *What are the second persons plural of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

A.

Indic. { *p.* legitis.
pr. legebatis.
pre. legistis.
pret. legeratis.
fu. legetis.

legimini.
 legebamini.
 lecti estis vel fuistis.
 lecti eratis vel fueratis.
 legemini.

Imp. legite, legitote.

legimini legiminor.

Potential

Active.

Passive.

Potential
p. legetis.
pr. legeretis.
pre. legeritis.
pret. legissetis.
fu. legeritis.

legamini.
 legeremini.
 lecti sitis vel fueritis.
 lecti essetis vel fuissetis.
 lecti eritis vel fueritis.

What are the third Persons Plural of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the third Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

p. legunt.
pr. legebant.
pre. legerunt vel ere.
pret. legerant.
fu. legent.

leguntur.
 legebantur.
 lecti sunt fuerunt vel fuere.
 lecti erant vel fuerant.
 legentur.

Imp. legant legunto.

legantur leguntor.

p. legant.
pr. legerent.
pre. legerint.
pret. legissent.
fu. legerint.

legantur.
 legerentur.
 lecti sint vel fuerint.
 lecti essent vel fuissent.
 lecti erunt vel fuerint.

What are the first Persons Singular of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

p. audio.
pr. audiebam.
pre. audiui.
pret. audiveram.
fu. audiam.

audior.
 audiebar.
 auditus sum vel fui.
 auditus eram vel fueram.
 audiar.

Imperative wants the first Person Singular.

p. audiam.
pr. audirem.
pre. audiverim.
pret. audivissem.
fu. audivero.

audiar.
 audirer.
 auditus sim vel fuerim.
 auditus essem vel fuissem.
 auditus ero vel fuero.

Imperative

*Active.**Passive.*

Infinitive	p. & pr. audire.	audiri.
	pre. & pret. audivisse.	auditum esse vel fuisse
	fu. auditurum esse.	auditum iri vel audiendum esse.
	ger. audiendi, do, dum.	
	sup. auditum, tu.	
	part. of p. audiens.	of the pre. auditus.
	fu. in <i>rus</i> , auditurus.	fu. in <i>du</i> s, audiendus.

2. What are the second Persons Singular of the *Active* & *Passive Voice* of Verbs of the fourth Conjugation, through out all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic.	p. audis.	audiris vel re.
	pr. audiebas.	audiebaris vel bare.
	pre. audivisti.	auditus es vel fuisti.
	pret. audiveras.	auditus eras vel fueras.
	fu. audies.	audieris vel ere.
	Imp. audi audito.	audire auditor.
Potential	p. audias.	audiaris vel audiare.
	pr. audires.	audireris vel ere.
	pre. audiveris.	auditus sis vel fueris.
	pret. audivisses.	auditus esses vel fuisses.
	fu. audiveris.	auditus eris vel fueris.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. What are the third persons Singular of the *Active* & *Passive Voice* of Verbs of the fourth Conjugation, through out all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic.	p. audit.	auditur.
	pr. audiebat.	audiebatur.
	pre. audivit.	auditus est vel fuit.
	pret. audiverat.	auditus erat vel fuerat.
	fu. audiet.	audietur.
	Imp. audiat audito.	audiatur auditor.

Poten

Active.

Passive.

Potential

p. audiat.
pr. audiret.
pre. audivirit.
pret. audivisset.
fu. audiverit.

audiatur.
audieretur.
auditus sit vel fuerit.
auditus esset vel fuisset.
auditus erit vel fuerit.

2. What are the first Persons Plural of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Indic.

p. audimus.
pr. audiebamus.
pre. audivimus.
pret. audiveramus.
fu. audiemus.

audimur.
audiebamur.
auditi sumus vel fuimus.
auditi eramus vel fueramus.
audiemur.

Imp.

audiamus.
p. audiamus.
pr. audiremus.
pre. audiverimus.
pret. audivissemus.
fu. audiverimus.

audiamur.
audiamur.
audiremur.
auditi simus vel fuerimus.
auditi essemus vel fuissemus.
auditi erimus vel fuerimus.

2. What are the second Persons Plural of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Indic.

p. auditis.
pr. audiebatis.
pre. audivistis.
pret. audiveratis.
fu. audietis.

audimini.
audiebamini.
auditi estis vel fuistis.
auditi eratis vel fueratis.
audiemini.

Imp. audite auditote.

audimini audiminor.

Potential

p. audiat.
pr. audiretis.
pre. audiveritis.
pret. audivissetis.
fu. audiveritis.

audiamini.
audiremini.
auditi sitis vel fueritis.
auditi essetis vel fuissetis.
auditi eritis vel fueritis.

2. What

Poten

*Active.**Passive.*

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of the Active and Passive Voice of Verbs of the fourth Conjugation, through out all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic.	{	p. audiunt.	audiuntur.
		pr. audiebant.	audiebantur.
		pre. audiverunt vel vere.	auditi sunt fuerunt vel fuerant.
		pret. audiverant.	auditi erant vel fuerant.
		fu. audient.	audientur.

Imp. audiunt audiunto. audiantur audiuntor.

Potential	{	p. audiant.	audiantur.
		pr. audirent.	audirentur.
		pre. audiverint.	auditi sint vel fuerint.
		pret. audivissent.	auditi essent vel fuissent.
		fu. audiverunt.	auditi erunt vel fuerunt.

Q. Why are some Verbs called irregular Verbs?

A. Because they differ from Verbs of the four Conjugations in their declining.

Q. How many of these irregular Verbs are there?

A. Eight; possum, volo, nolo, malo, edo, fio, fero, and feror.

Q. How is possum declined?

A. Possum, potes, potui, posse, potens, to be able.

Q. How is volo declined?

A. Volo, vis, volui, velle, volendi, do, dum, supinacaret, volens, to be willing.

Q. How is nolo declined?

A. Nolo, nonvis, nolui, nolle, nolendi, do, dum, supinacaret, nolens, to be unwilling?

Q. How is malo declined?

A. Malo, mavis, malui, malle, malendi, do, dum, supinacaret, malens, to be more willing.

Q. How is edo declined?

A. Edo

1. Edo, edis vel es, edi, edere vel esse, endi, do, dum, esum, esu, vel estum, estu, edens, esurus, vel esturus, *to eat.*

2. *How is fio declined?*

1. Fio, fis, factus sum vel fui, fieri, factus, faciendus, *to be made or done.*

2. *How is fero declined?*

1. Fero, fers, tuli, ferre, ferendi, do, dum, latum, latu, ferens, laturus, *to bear, or suffer.*

2. *How is feror declined?*

1. Feror, ferris vel ferre, latus sum vel fui, ferri, latus, ferendus, *to be born, or suffered.*

2. *What are the first Persons Singular of possum, throughout all Moods and Tenses?*

Ind. Mood.	{ present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	{ Singulariter	{ possum, I am able. poteram, I was able. potui, I have been able. potueram, I had been able. potero, I shall, or will be able.
------------	--	----------------	---

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	{ present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	{ Singulariter.	{ possim, I may, or can be able. possem, I might, or could be able. potuerim, I might, could, should, or ought to have been able. potuissem, I might, could, should, or ought to had been able. potuero, I may, or can be able hereafter.
-----------------	--	-----------------	---

Infinitive Mood. Pres. and Preterim. *posse*, to be able.
Preterper. and Preterplu. *potuisse*, to have, or had been able.

2. *What are the second Persons Singular of possum, through out all Moods and Tenses ?*

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	Present T.	Singulariter	<i>potes</i> , thou art able.
		Preterim.		<i>poteras</i> , thou wast able.
		Preterper.		<i>potuisti</i> , thou hast been able.
		Preterplu.		<i>potueras</i> , thou hadst been able.
		Future.		<i>poteris</i> , thou shalt, or wilt be able.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Singulariter	<i>possis</i> , thou may'st, or canst be able.
		preterim.		<i>posses</i> , thou might'st, or could'st be able.
		preterper.		<i>potueris</i> , thou might'st, could'st should'st, or ought'st, to have been able.
		preterplu.		<i>potuisses</i> , thou might'st, could'st should'st, or ought'st to have been able.
		future.		<i>potueris</i> , thou may'st, or canst be able hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. *What are the third Persons Singular of possum, through out all Moods and Tenses ?*

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	present T.	Singulariter	<i>potest</i> , he is able.
		preterim.		<i>poterat</i> , he was able.
		preterper.		<i>potuit</i> , he hath been able.
		preterplu.		<i>potuerat</i> , he had been able.
		future.		<i>poterit</i> , he shall, or will be able.

Potent

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Singulariter	<i>possit</i> , he may, or can be able.
		preterim.		<i>poterat</i> , he might, or could be able.
		preterper.		<i>potuerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have been able.
		preterplu.		<i>potuisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to had been able.
		future.		<i>potuerit</i> , he may, or can be able hereafter.

What are the first persons plural of *possum*, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Ind. Mood.	{	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>possumus</i> , we are able.
		preterim.		<i>poteramus</i> , we were able.
		preterper.		<i>potuimus</i> , we have been able.
		preterplu.		<i>potueramus</i> , we had been able.
		future.		<i>poterimus</i> , we shall, or will be able.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>possimus</i> , we may, or can be able.
		preterim.		<i>possemus</i> , we might or could be able.
		preterper.		<i>potuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been able.
		preterplu.		<i>potuissimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been able.
		future.		<i>potuerimus</i> , we may, or can be able hereafter.

Q. What are the second persons plural of possum, through
out all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter	<i>potesitis</i> , ye are able.
		preterim.		<i>poteratis</i> , ye were able.
		preterper.		<i>potuistis</i> , ye have been able.
		preterplu.		<i>potueratis</i> , ye had been able.
		future.		<i>poteritis</i> , ye shall, or will be able.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter.	<i>possitis</i> , ye may, or can be able.
		preterim.		<i>possētis</i> , ye might, or could be able.
		preterper.		<i>potueritis</i> , ye might, could should, or ought to have been able.
		preterplu.		<i>potuissetis</i> , ye might, could should, or ought to have been able.
		future.		<i>potueritis</i> , ye may, or can be able hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of possum, through
out all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	Present T.	} Pluraliter	<i>possunt</i> , they are able.
		Preterim.		<i>poterant</i> , they were able.
		Preterper.		<i>potuerunt vel ēre</i> , they have been able.
		Preterplu.		<i>potuerant</i> , they had been able.
		Future.		<i>poterint</i> , they shall, or will be able.

Potential Mood.

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter	<i>possint</i>, they may, or can be able.
		<i>possent</i>, they might, or could, be able.
		<i>potuerint</i>, they might, could, should, or ought to have been able.
		<i>potuissent</i>, they might, could, should, or ought to had been able.
		<i>potuerint</i>, they may, or can be able hereafter.

2. What are the first Persons Singular of Volo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Singulariter	<i>volo</i>, I am willing.
		<i>volebam</i>, I was willing.
		<i>volui</i>, I have been willing.
		<i>volueram</i>, I had been willing.
		<i>volam</i>, I shall, or will be willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Singulariter	<i>velim</i>, I may, or can be willing.
		<i>vellem</i>, I might, or could be willing.
		<i>voluerim</i>, I might, would, should, or ought to have been willing.
		<i>voluissem</i>, I might, would, should, or ought to had been willing.
		<i>voluero</i>, I may, or can be willing hereafter.

2. What are the second persons singular of Volo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	Present T.	{	Singulariter	<i>vis</i> , thou art willing.
		Preterim.			<i>volebas</i> , thou wast willing.
		Preterper.			<i>voluisti</i> , thou hast been willing.
		Preterplu.			<i>volueras</i> , thou hadst been willing.
		Future.			<i>voles</i> , thou shalt, or will be willing.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	Singulariter	<i>velis</i> , thou may'st, or canst be willing.
		preterimper.			<i>velles</i> , thou might'st, or couldst be willing.
		preterperf.			<i>volueris</i> , thou might'st, couldst should'st, or ought'st to have been willing.
		preterplu.			<i>voluisses</i> , thou might'st, couldst should'st, or ought'st to have been willing.
		future.			<i>volueris</i> , thou may'st, or canst be willing hereafter.

Infinitive Mood. Pres. and Preterim. *velle*, to be willing. Preterper. and Preterplu. *voluisse*, to have, or had been willing.

2. What are the third Persons Singular of Volo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	Singulariter	<i>vult</i> , he is willing.
		preterim.			<i>volebat</i> , he was willing.
		preterper.			<i>voluit</i> , he hath been willing.
		preterplu.			<i>voluerat</i> , he had been willing.
		future.			<i>volet</i> , he shall, or will be willing.

Potent

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.	Singulariter	<i>velit</i> , he may, or can be willing.
		<i>vellet</i> , he might, or could, be willing.
		<i>voluerit</i> , he might, could, should, ought to have been willing.
		<i>voluisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to had been willing.
		<i>voluerit</i> , he may, or can be willing hereafter.

Infinitive Mood is always the same.

What are the first persons plural of Volo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter	<i>volumus</i> , we are willing.
		<i>volebamus</i> , we were willing.
		<i>voluimus</i> , we have been willing.
		<i>volueramus</i> , we had been willing.
		<i>volemus</i> , we shall, or will be willing.

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter	<i>velimus</i> , we may, or can be willing.
		<i>vellemus</i> , we might, or could be willing.
		<i>voluerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been willing.
		<i>voluissemus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been willing.
		<i>voluerimus</i> , we may, or can be willing hereafter.

2. What are the second persons plural of Volo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>vultis</i> , ye are willing.
	preterim.		<i>volebatis</i> , ye were willing.
	preterper.		<i>voluistis</i> , ye have been willing.
	preterplu.		<i>volueratis</i> , ye had been willing.
	future.		<i>voletis</i> , ye shall, or will be willing.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>velitis</i> , ye may, or can be willing.
	preterim.		<i>velletis</i> , ye might, or could be willing.
	preterper.		<i>volueritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been willing.
	preterplu.		<i>voluissetis</i> , ye might, could; should, or ought to had been willing.
	future.		<i>volueritis</i> , ye may, or can be willing hereafter.

2. What are the third persons plural of Volo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>volunt</i> , they are willing.
	Preterim.		<i>volebant</i> , they were willing.
	Preterper.		<i>voluerunt</i> , <i>vel voluere</i> , they have been willing.
	Preterplu.		<i>voluerant</i> , they had been willing.
	Future.		<i>volent</i> , they shall, or will be willing.

Potential

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>velint</i> , they may, or can be willing.
	Preterim.		<i>vellent</i> , they might, or could be willing.
	Preterper.		<i>voluerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been willing.
	Preterplu.		<i>voluissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to had been willing.
	Future.		<i>voluerint</i> , they may, or can be willing hereafter.

Q. What are the first persons singular of Nolo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Ind. Mood.	Present T.	Singulariter	<i>nolo</i> , I am unwilling.
	Preterim.		<i>nolebam</i> , I was unwilling.
	Preterper.		<i>nolui</i> , I have been unwilling.
	Preterplu.		<i>nolueram</i> , I had been unwilling.
	Future.		<i>nolam</i> , I shall, or will be willing.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>nolim</i> , I may, or can be unwilling.
	preterim.		<i>nollem</i> , I might, or could be unwilling.
	preterper.		<i>noluerim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been unwilling.
	preterplu.		<i>noluissem</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to had been unwilling.
	future.		<i>noluerero</i> , I may, or can be unwilling hereafter.

Infinitive Mood. Pres. and Preterim. *nolle*, to be unwilling. Preterper. and Preterplu. *noluisse*, to have, or had been unwilling.

2. What are the second persons plural of *Nolo*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	}	Pluraliter	{	<i>nonvis</i> , thou art unwilling.
		preterim.				<i>nolebas</i> , thou wast unwilling.
		preterper.				<i>noluisti</i> , thou hast been unwilling.
		preterplu.				<i>nolueras</i> , thou hadst been unwilling.
		future.				<i>noles</i> , thou shalt, or will be unwilling.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *noli noli-to*, be thou unwilling.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	}	Singulariter	{	<i>nolis</i> , thou may'st, or canst be unwilling.
		preterim.				<i>nolles</i> , thou might'st, or could'st be unwilling.
		preterper.				<i>nolueris</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to have been unwilling.
		preterplu.				<i>noluisses</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to had been unwilling.
		future.				<i>nolueris</i> , thou may'st, or canst be unwilling hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. What are the third persons singular of *Nolo*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	}	Singulariter	{	<i>nonvult</i> , he is unwilling.
		preterim.				<i>nolebat</i> , he was unwilling.
		preterper.				<i>noluit</i> , he hath been unwilling.
		preterplu.				<i>noluerat</i> , he had been unwilling.
		future.				<i>nolet</i> , he shall, or will be unwilling.

The Imperative Mood wants the third Person Singular.

Potential

Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>nolit</i> , he may, or can be unwilling.
Preterim.		<i>nollet</i> , he might, or could be unwilling.
Preterper.		<i>noluerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have been unwilling.
Preterplu.		<i>noluisse</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to had been unwilling.
Future.		<i>noluerit</i> , he may, or can be unwilling hereafter.

What are the first persons plural of Nolo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T.	Pluraliter	<i>nolumus</i> , we are unwilling.
preterim.		<i>nolebamus</i> , we were unwilling.
preterper.		<i>noluimus</i> , we have been unwilling.
preterplu.		<i>nolueramus</i> , we had been unwilling.
future.		<i>nolemus</i> , we shall, or will be unwilling.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Plural.

present T.	Pluraliter	<i>nolimus</i> , we may, or can be unwilling.
preterim.		<i>nollemus</i> , we might, or could be unwilling.
preterper.		<i>noluerimus</i> , we might, would, should, or ought to have been unwilling.
preterplu.		<i>noluissemus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been unwilling.
future.		<i>noluerimus</i> , we may, or can be unwilling hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of Nolo, through out all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	Present T. Preterim. Preterper.	Pluraliter	<i>nonvultis</i> , ye are unwilling.
			<i>nolebatis</i> , ye were unwilling.
			<i>nolulistis</i> , ye have been
	Preterplu.		willing.
			<i>nolueratis</i> , ye had been
Future.			willing.
			<i>noletis</i> , ye shall, or will be
			willing.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *nolitote*, be ye unwilling.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter	<i>nolitis</i> , ye may, or can be
	preterim.		willing.
	preterper.		<i>nolletis</i> , ye might, or could
	preterplu.		unwilling.
	future.		<i>nolueritis</i> , ye might, could
			should, or ought to have been
			unwilling.
			<i>noluissestis</i> , ye might, could
			should, or ought to had been
			unwilling.
			<i>nolueritis</i> , ye may, or can be
			willing hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of Nolo, through out all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	present T. preterim. preterper.	Pluraliter	<i>nolunt</i> , they are unwilling.
			<i>nolebant</i> , they were unwilling.
			<i>noluerunt, vel noluer</i> , they ha
	been unwilling.		
	preterplū.		<i>noluerant</i> , they had been u
			willing.
future.	<i>nolet</i> , they shall or will be u		
	willing.		

The Imperative Mood wants the third Person Plural.

Potential

Present T.

Preterim.

Preterper.

Preterplu.

Future.

Pluraliter

nolint, they may, or can be unwilling.

nollent, they might, or could be unwilling.

noluerint, they might, could, should, or ought to have been unwilling.

noluisse, they might, could, should, or ought to have been unwilling.

noluerint, they may, or can be unwilling hereafter.

What are the first Persons Singular of *Malo*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T.

Preterim.

Preterper.

Preterplu.

Future.

Singulariter

malo, I am more willing.

malebam, I was more willing.

malui, I have been more willing.

malueram, I had been more willing.

malam, I shall or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

present T.

preterim.

preterper.

preterplu.

future.

Singulariter

malim, I may, or can be more willing.

mallem, I might, or could be more willing.

maluerim, I might, could, should, or ought to have been more willing.

maluissem, I might, could, should, or ought to have been more willing.

maluero, I may, or can be more willing.

Infinit.

Inf. M. { Pres. and Pr. im. } *malle,* { to be more willing } Prep. and Prpl. { *maluisse* } to have, or had been more willing.

2. What are the second Persons Singular of *Malo*, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Indic. Mood.	{	Present T.	Singulariter	{	<i>ma'is</i> , thou art more willing.
		Preterim.			<i>malebas</i> , thou wast more willing.
		Preterper.			<i>maluisti</i> , thou hast been more willing.
		Preterplu.			<i>malueras</i> , thou hadst been more willing.
		Future.			<i>males</i> , thou shalt, or wilt be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	Singulariter	{	<i>malis</i> , thou may'st, or canst be more willing.
		preterim.			<i>malles</i> , thou might'st, or could'st be more willing.
		preterper.			<i>malueris</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st or ought'st to have been more willing.
		preterplu.			<i>maluisses</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st or ought'st to had been more willing.
		future.			<i>malueris</i> , thou may'st, or can't be more willing hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. What

2. What are the third Persons Singular of *Malo*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Singulariter	<i>mauult</i>, he is more willing.
		<i>malebat</i>, he was more willing.
		<i>maluit</i>, he hath been more willing.
		<i>maluerat</i>, he had been more willing.
		<i>malet</i>, he shall, or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.	Singulariter	<i>malit</i>, he may, or can be more willing.
		<i>mallet</i>, he might, or could be more willing.
		<i>maluerit</i>, he might, could, should, or ought to have been more willing.
		<i>maluisset</i>, he might, could, should, or ought to had been more willing.
		<i>maluerit</i>, he may, or can be more willing hereafter.

What are the first Persons Plural of *Malo*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.	Pluraliter	<i>malumus</i>, we are more willing.
		<i>malebamus</i>, we were more willing.
		<i>maluimus</i>, we have been more willing.
		<i>malueramus</i>, we had been more willing.
		<i>malemus</i>, we shall, or will be more willing.

The

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>malimus</i> , we may, or can be more willing.
	Preterim.		<i>malleamus</i> , we might, or could be more willing.
	Preterper.		<i>maluerimus</i> , we might, could have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		<i>maluiffemus</i> , we might, could have been more willing.
	Future.		<i>maluerimus</i> , we may or can be more willing hereafter.

Q. What are the second Persons Plural of *Malo*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>mauultis</i> , ye are more willing.
	Preterim.		<i>malebatis</i> , ye were more willing.
	Preterper.		<i>maluiffis</i> , ye have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		<i>malueratis</i> , ye had been more willing.
	Future.		<i>maletis</i> , ye shall, or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>malitis</i> , ye may, or can be more willing.
	Preterim.		<i>malletis</i> , ye might, or could be more willing.
	Preterper.		<i>malueritis</i> , ye might, could have been more willing.
	Preterplu.		<i>maluiffetis</i> , ye might, could have been more willing.
	Future.		<i>malueritis</i> , ye may, or can be more willing hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of Malo, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>malunt</i> , they are more willing.
Preterim.		<i>malebant</i> , they were more willing.
Preterper.		<i>maluerunt vel ere</i> , they have been more willing.
Preterplu.		<i>maluerant</i> , they had been more willing.
Future.		<i>malent</i> , they shall, or will be more willing.

The Imperative Mood is wanting.

Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>malint</i> , they may, or can be more willing.
Preterim.		<i>mallent</i> , they might, or could be more willing.
Preterper.		<i>maluerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been more willing.
Preterplu.		<i>maluissent</i> , they might, could, should, or out to had been more willing.
Future.		<i>maluerint</i> , they may, or can be more willing hereafter.

Q. What are the first Persons Singular of Edo, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

Present T.	Singulariter	<i>edo</i> , I eat.
Preterim.		<i>edebam</i> , I did eat.
Preterper.		<i>edi</i> , I have eat.
Preterplu.		<i>ederam</i> , I had eat.
Future T.		<i>edam</i> , I shall, or will eat.

The

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Potential Mood.	{	Present T.	}	Singulariter	{	<i>edam</i> , I may, or can eat.													
		Preterim.				<i>ederem vel essem</i> , I might, or could eat.													
		Preterper.				<i>ederim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have eat.													
		Preterplu.				<i>edissem</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to had eat.													
		Future.				<i>edero</i> , I may, or can eat hereafter.													
Inf. M.	{	Presen.	}	}	{	to eat.	{	Prep.	{	to have									
		and									}	and	{	or had					
		Pret.im.													}	Prpl.	{	<i>edisſe</i>	eaten.
Future, <i>esurum eſſe</i> , to eat hereafter.																			

2. What are the second Persons Singular of Edo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	{	Present T.	}	Singular.	{	edis vel es, thou eatest.		
		Preterim.				edebas, thou didst eat.		
		Preterper.				edisti, thou hast eat.		
		Preterplu.				ederas, thou hadst eat.		
		Future.				edes, thou shalt; or wilt eat.		

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *es esto*, eat thou.

Potential Mood.	{	Present T.	}	Singular.	{	edes, thou may'st, or canst eat.		
		Preterim.				ederes vel esses, thou might'st, or could'st eat.		
		Preterper.				ederis, thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to have eat.		
		Preterplu.				edissem, thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to had eat.		
		Future.				ederis, thou may'st, or canst eat hereafter.		

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. What

2. What are the third Persons Singular of Edo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.]	Singulariter	edit vel est, he eateth.
		edebat, he did eat.
		edit, he hath eat.
		ederat, he had eat.
		edet, he shall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *edat esto*, *edito*, eat he, or let him eat.

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.]	Singulariter	edat, he may, or can eat.
		ederet vel esset, he might, or could eat.
		ederit, he might, could, should, or ought to have eat.
		edisset, he might, could, should, or ought to had eat.
		ederit, he may, or can eat hereafter.

2. What are the first Persons Plural of Edo, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.]	Singulariter	edimus, we eat.
		edebamus, we did eat.
		edimus, we have eat.
		ederamus, we had eat.
		edemus, we shall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood, Present Plural, *edamus*, let us eat.

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.]	Singulariter	edamus, we may or can eat.
		ederemus vel effemus, we might or could eat.
		ederimus, we might, could, should, or ought to have eaten.
		edissemus, we might, could, should, or ought to had eaten.
		ederimus, we may, or can eat hereafter.

2. What

2. What are the second Persons Plural of Edo, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Ind. Mood.	{	Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>editis vel estis</i> , ye eat.
		Preterim.		<i>edebatis</i> , ye did eat.
		Preterper.		<i>edistis</i> , ye have eaten.
		Preterplu.		<i>ederatis</i> , ye had eaten.
		Future.		<i>edetis</i> , ye shall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Plural, *edite, este, estote*,
editote, eat ye.

Poten. Mood.	{	Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>edatis</i> , ye may, or can eat.
		Preterim.		<i>ederetis vel essetis</i> , ye might, could eat.
		Preterper.		<i>ederitis</i> , ye might, could, should or ought to have eaten.
		Preterplu.		<i>edissetis</i> , ye might, could, should or ought to had eaten.
		Future.		<i>ederitis</i> , ye may, or can eat hereafter.

2. What are the third Persons Plural of Edo, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	Present T.	Pluraliter	<i>edunt</i> , they eat.
		Preterim.		<i>edebant</i> , they did eat.
		Preterper.		<i>ederunt vel edere</i> , they have eaten.
		Preterplu.		<i>ederant</i> , they had eaten.
		Future.		<i>edent</i> , they shall, or will eat.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *edant edunt*,
let them eat.

Present T.	Singulariter	<i>edant</i> , they may, or can eat.
Preterim.		<i>ederent vel essent</i> , they might, or could eat.
Preterper.		<i>ederint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have eaten.
Preterplu.		<i>edissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to had eat.
Future.		<i>ederint</i> , they may, or can eat hereafter.

What are the first Persons Singular of Fio, thraughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T.	Singulariter	<i>fio</i> , I am made, or done.
Preterim.		<i>fiebam</i> , I was made, or done.
Preterper.		<i>factus sum vel fui</i> , I have been made or done.
Preterplu.		<i>factus eram vel fueram</i> , I had been made, or done.
Future		<i>fiam</i> , I shall, or will be made or done.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Present T.	Singular.	<i>fiam</i> , I may, or can be made, or done.
Preterim.		<i>fierem</i> , I might, or could be made or done.
Preterper.		<i>factus sim vel fuerim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been made or done.
Preterplu.		<i>factus essem vel fuisset</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to had been made or done.
Future.		<i>factus ero vel fuero</i> , I may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

Pres.

Pres. and Prim. } *feri,* { to be made, or done. } Pre. and Prpl. } *factum esse vel fuisse,* { to have, or been made, or done.

Future, *factum iri vel faciendum esse*, to be made, or done hereafter.

Q. What are the second Persons Singular of Fio, through out all the Moods and Tenses ?

A. Indic. Mood. { present T. } *fis*, thou art made, or done.
 { preterim. } *fiebas*, thou wast made, or done.
 { preterper. } *factus es vel fuisti*, thou hast been made, or done.
 { preterplu. } *factus eras vel fueras*, thou hast been made, or done.
 { future. } *fies*, thou shalt, or wilt be made, or done.
 Singular.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *fis* be thou made, or done.

Potential Mood. { present T. } *fias*, thou may'st, or canst be made, or done.
 { preterim. } *fieres*, thou might'st, or couldst be made, or done.
 { preterp. } *factus sis vel fueris*, thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to have been made, or done.
 { preterplu. } *factus esses vel fuisses*, thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to had been made, or done.
 { future. } *factus eris vel fueris*, thou may'st, or canst be made, or done hereafter.
 Singulariter

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

Q. W

What are the third Persons Singular of Fio, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

present T.	Singulariter	<i>fit</i> , he is made, or done.
preterim.		<i>fiēbat</i> , he was made, or done.
preterper.		<i>factus est vel fuit</i> , he hath been made, or done.
preterplu.		<i>factus erat vel fuerat</i> , he had been made or done.
future.		<i>fiet</i> , he shall, or will be made or done.

Imperative Mood, present Tense Singular, *fiat fito*, let him be made, or done.

present T.	Singulariter	<i>fias</i> , he may, or can be made, or done.
preterim.		<i>fieret</i> , he might, or could be made, or done.
preterper.		<i>factus sit vel fuerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have been made, or done.
preterplu.		<i>factus esset vel fuisset</i> , he might could, should, or ought to had been made, or done.
future.		<i>factus erit vel fuerit</i> , he may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

What are the first Persons Plural of Fio, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

present T.	Plural.	<i>simus</i> , we are made, or done.
preterim.		<i>fiēbat</i> , he was made, or done.
preterper.		<i>facti simus vel fuimus</i> , we have been made, or done.
preterplu.		<i>facti eramus vel fueramus</i> , we had been made, or done.
future.		<i>fiemus</i> , we shall, or will be made, or done.

Imperative

Imperative Mood present Tense Plural, *fiamus*, let us be made, or done.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>fiamus</i> , we may, or can be made or done.
	preterim.		<i>fieremus</i> , we might, or could be made, or done.
	preterper.		<i>facti simus vel fuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been made, or done.
	preterplu.		<i>facti essemus vel fuissetus</i> , we might, could, should, or, ought to have been made, or done.
	future.		<i>facti erimus vel fuerimus</i> , we may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

Q. What are the second Persons Plural of Fio, throughout all Moods and Tenses.

A.

Indicat. Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>fitis</i> , ye are made, or done.
	preterim.		<i>fiébatis</i> , ye were made, or done.
	preterper.		<i>facti estis vel fuistis</i> , ye have been made, or done.
	preterplu.		<i>facti eratis vel fueratis</i> , ye have been made, or done.
	future.		<i>fietis</i> , ye shall, or will be made or done.

Imperative Mood, present Tense Singular, *fite fitote*, ye made or done.

present T.	Pluraliter	<i>fiatis</i> , ye may, or can be made, or done.
preterim.		<i>fieretis</i> , ye might, or could be made, or done.
preterper.		<i>facti sitis vel fueritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have been made, or done.
preterplu.		<i>facti essetis vel fuissetis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to had been made, or done.
future.		<i>facti eritis vel fueritis</i> , ye may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

What are the third Persons Plural of Fio, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>fiunt</i> , they are made, or done.
preterim.		<i>fiabant</i> , they were made, or done.
preterper.		<i>facti sunt, fuerunt vel fuere</i> , they have been made, or done.
preterplu.		<i>facti erant vel fuerant</i> , they had been made, or done.
future.		<i>fient</i> , they shall, or will be made, or done.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Plural, *fiant fiunto*, let them be made, or done.

present T.	Pluraliter	<i>fiant</i> , they may or can be made or done.
preterim.		<i>fierent</i> , they might, or could be made, or done.
preterper.		<i>facti sint vel fuerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been made, or done.
preterplu.		<i>facti essent vel fuissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought, to had been made, or done.
future.		<i>facti erunt vel fuerint</i> , they may, or can be made, or done hereafter.

2. What are the first Persons Singular of Fero, through all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	Singulariter.	{	<i>fero</i> , I bear, or suffer.
		preterim.				<i>ferebam</i> , I did bear, or suffer.
		preterper.				<i>tuli</i> , I have born, or suffered.
		preterplu.				<i>tuleram</i> , I had born, or suffered.
		future.				<i>feram</i> , I shall, or will, bear or suffer.

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	Singulariter	{	<i>feram</i> , I may, or can bear or suffer.
		preterim.				<i>ferrem</i> , I might, or could bear or suffer.
		preterper.				<i>tulerim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have born, or suffered.
		preterplu.				<i>tuliffem</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have born, or suffered.
		future.				<i>tulero</i> , I may, or can bear or suffer hereafter.

Inf. M.	{	Presen.	{	<i>ferre</i> ,	{	to bear,	{	Prep.	{	<i>tulisse</i> ,	{	to have, or
		and Pretim.				or suffer.						born, or suffered.

Future Tense, *laturum esse*, to bear, or suffer hereafter

2. What are the second Persons Singular of Fero, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indicative Mood.	present T.	Singulariter	<i>fers</i> , thou bearest or sufferest.
	preterim.		<i>ferebas</i> , thou didst bear, or suffer.
	preterper.		<i>tulisti</i> , thou hast born, or suffered.
	preterplu.		<i>tuleras</i> , thou hadst born, or suffered.
	future.		<i>feres</i> , thou shalt, or wilt bear, or suffer.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *fer ferto*, do thou bear, or suffer.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singular.	<i>feras</i> , thou may'st, or canst bear, or suffer.
	preterim.		<i>ferres</i> , thou might'st or could'st bear or suffer.
	preterper.		<i>tuleris</i> , thou might'st, could'st should'st, or ought'st to have born, or suffered.
	preterplu.		<i>tulisses</i> , thou might'st, could'st should'st, or ought'st to had born, or suffered.
	future.		<i>tuleris</i> , thou may'st or can'st bear, or suffer hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

Q. What are the third Persons Singular of Fero, throughout all the Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	Singulariter.	{	<i>fert</i> , he bears, or suffers.
		preterim.				<i>ferebat</i> , he did bear, or suffer.
		preterper.				<i>tulit</i> , he hath born, or suffered
		preterplu.				<i>tulerat</i> , he had born, or suffered
		future.				<i>feret</i> , he shall, or will bear, or suffer.

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *ferat fert*, let him bear, or suffer.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	Singular.	{	<i>ferat</i> , he may, or can bear, or suffer.
		preterim.				<i>ferret</i> , he might, or could bear, or suffer.
		preterper.				<i>tulerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have born, or suffered.
		preterplu.				<i>tulisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have had born, or suffered.
		future.				<i>tulerit</i> , he may, or can bear, or suffer hereafter.

Q. What are the first Persons Plural of Fero, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	Pluraliter	{	<i>ferimus</i> , we bear, or suffer.
		preterim.				<i>ferebamus</i> , we did bear or suffer.
		preterper.				<i>tulimus</i> , we have born, or suffered.
		preterplu.				<i>tuleramus</i> , we had born, or suffered.
		future.				<i>feremus</i> , we shall or will bear, or suffer.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *feramur*, let us bear, or suffer.

Poten

present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>feramus</i> , we may, or can bear, or suffer.
preterim.		<i>ferremus</i> , we might, or could bear, or suffer.
preterper.		<i>tulerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have born or suffered.
preterplu.		<i>tulissemus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had born, or suffered.
future.		<i>tulerimus</i> , we may, or can bear, or suffer hereafter.

What are the second Persons Plural of *Fero*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>fertis</i> , ye bear, or suffer.
preterim.		<i>ferebatis</i> , ye did bear, or suffer.
preterper.		<i>tulistis</i> , ye have born or suffered.
preterplu.		<i>tuleratis</i> , ye had born, or suffered.
future.		<i>feretis</i> , ye shall, or will bear, or suffer.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ferite fertote* bear, or suffer ye.

present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>feratis</i> , ye may, or can bear, or suffer.
preterim.		<i>ferretis</i> , ye might, or could bear, or suffer.
preterper.		<i>tuleritis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to have born, or suffered.
preterplu.		<i>tulissetis</i> , ye might, could, should, or ought to had born, or suffered.
future.		<i>tuleritis</i> , ye may, or can bear, or suffer hereafter.

Q. What are the third Persons Plural of Fero, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter	<i>ferunt</i> , they bear, or suffer.
		preterim.		<i>ferebant</i> , they did bear, or suffer.
		preterper.		<i>tulerunt vel tulere</i> , they have
		preterplu.		born, or suffered.
		future.		<i>tulerant</i> , they had born, or suffered.
				<i>ferent</i> , they shall, or will bear or suffer.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ferant ferunt*, let them bear, or suffer.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	} Pluraliter.	<i>ferant</i> , they may or can bear, or suffer.
		preterim.		<i>ferrent</i> , they might, or could bear, or suffer.
		preterper.		<i>tulerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have born, or suffered.
		preterplu.		<i>tulissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to had born, or suffered.
		future.		<i>tulerit</i> , they may, or can bear or suffer hereafter.

Q. What are the first Persons Singular of Feror, throughout all Moods and Tenses ?

A.

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	} Singulariter.	<i>feror</i> , I am born, or suffered.
		preterim.		<i>ferebar</i> , I was born, or suffered.
		preterper.		<i>latus sum vel fui</i> , I have been
		preterplu.		born, or suffered.
		future.		<i>latus eram vel fueram</i> , I had been
				born, or suffered.
				<i>ferar</i> , I shall, or will be born, or suffered.

Impera-

The Imperative Mood wants the first Person Singular.

Present T.	Singulariter.	<i>ferar</i> , I may, or can be born, or suffered.
Preterim.		<i>ferrer</i> , I might, or could be born, or suffered.
Preterper.		<i>latus sim vel fuerim</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to have been born, or suffered.
Preterplu.		<i>latus essem vel fuisssem</i> , I might, could, should, or ought to had been born, or suffered.
Future.		<i>latus ero vel fuero</i> , I may, or can be born, or suffered hereafter.

Infinitive Mood.

Inf.	{ <i>ferri</i> }	to be	{ Prep. and Pr.pl. }	<i>latum</i>	{	to have, or had
and im.		born, or suffered.		<i>esse vel fuisse</i>		been born, or suffered.

ature, *latum iri vel ferendum esse*, to be born, or suffered hereafter.

What are the second Persons Singular of *Feror*, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T.	Singulariter	<i>ferris vel ferre</i> , thou art born, or suffered.
Preterim.		<i>ferebaris vel ferebare</i> , thou wast born, or suffered.
Preterper.		<i>latus es vel fuisti</i> , thou hast been born, or suffered.
Preterplu.		<i>latus eras vel fueras</i> , thou hadst been born, or suffered.
Future.		<i>fereris vel ferere</i> , thou shalt, or wilt be born, or suffered.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Singular, *ferre fertur*,
be thou born, or suffered.

Potential Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>feraris vel ferare</i> , thou may'st, or can'st be born, or suffered.
		preterim.		<i>ferreris vel ferrere</i> , thou might'st or could'st be born, or suf- fered.
		preterper.		<i>latus sis vel fueris</i> , thou might'st could'st, should'st, or ought'st to have been born, or suffered.
		preterplu.		<i>latus esses vel fuisses</i> , thou might'st, could'st, should'st, or ought'st to had been born, or suffered.
		future.		<i>latus eris vel fueris</i> , thou may'st, or can'st be born, or suffered hereafter.

The Infinitive Mood is always the same.

2. What are the third Persons Singular of Feror, through-
out all Moods and Tenses?

Indic. Mood.	{	present T.	{	<i>fertur</i> , he is born, or suffered.
		preterim.		<i>ferebatur</i> , he was born, or suffered.
		preterper.		<i>latus est vel fuit</i> , he hath been born, or suffered.
		preterplu.		<i>latus erat vel fuerat</i> , he had been born, or suffered.
		future.		<i>feretur</i> , he shall, or will be born, or suffered.

Impera

Imperative Mood Present Tense Singular, *feratur. feratur.*
let him be born, or suffered.

Potential Mood.	present T.	Singulariter.	<i>feratur</i> , he may, or can be born or suffered.
	preterim.		<i>ferretur</i> , he might, or could be born, or suffered.
	preterper.		<i>latus sit vel fuerit</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to have been born, or suffered.
	preterplu.		<i>latus esset vel fuisset</i> , he might, could, should, or ought to had been born, or suffered.
	future.		<i>latus erit vel fuerit</i> , he may, or can be born, or suffered hereafter.

2. What are the first Persons Plural of Feror, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Indicative Mood.	present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>ferimur</i> , we are born, or suffered.
	preterim.		<i>ferebamur</i> , we were born, or suffered.
	preterper.		<i>lati sumus vel fuimus</i> , we have been born, or suffered.
	preterplu.		<i>lati eramus vel fueramus</i> , we had been born, or suffered.
	future.		<i>feremur</i> , we shall, or will be born, or suffered.

The Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *feramur*,
let us be born, or suffered.

Potential Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>feramur</i> , we may, or can be born, or suffered.
	Preterim.		<i>ferremur</i> , we might, or could be born, or suffered.
	Preterper.		<i>lati simus vel fuerimus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to have been born, suffered.
	Preterplu.		<i>lati essemus vel fuissetus</i> , we might, could, should, or ought to had been born, or suffered.
	Future.		<i>lati erimus vel fuerimus</i> , we may, or can be born, or suffered hereafter.

Q. What are the second persons plural of Feror, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A.

Indic Mood.	Present T.	Pluraliter.	<i>ferimini</i> , ye are born, or suffered.
	Preterim.		<i>ferebamini</i> , ye were born, or suffered.
	Preterper.		<i>lati estis vel fuistis</i> , ye have been born, or suffered.
	Preterplu.		<i>lati eratis vel fueratis</i> , ye had been born, or suffered.
	Future.		<i>feremini</i> , ye shall, or will be born, or suffered.

Impera

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ferimini ferimini*, be ye born, or suffered.

present T. preterim. preterper. preterplu. future.	Pluraliter.	<i>feramini</i>, ye may, or can be born, or suffered. <i>ferremini</i>, ye might, or could be born, or suffered. <i>lati sitis vel fueritis</i>, ye might, could, should, or ought to have been born, or suffered. <i>lati essetis vel fuissetis</i>, ye might, could, should, or ought to had been born, or suffered. <i>lati eritis vel fueritis</i>, ye may, or can be born, or suffered hereafter.

What are the third Persons Plural of Feror, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

Present T. Preterim. Preterper. Preterplu. Future.	Pluraliter.	<i>feruntur</i>, they are born, or suffered. <i>ferebantur</i>, they were born, or suffered. <i>lati sunt fuerunt vel fuere</i>, they have been born, or suffered. <i>lati erant vel fuerant</i>, they had been born, or suffered. <i>ferentur</i>, they shall, or will be born, or suffered.

Imperative Mood, Present Tense Plural, *ferantur feruntur*, let them be born, or suffered.

Potential Mood,	{	present T.	{	<i>ferantur</i> , they may, or can be born, or suffered.
		preterim.		<i>ferrentur</i> , they might, or could be born, or suffered.
		preterper.		<i>lati sint vel fuerint</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to have been born, or suffered.
		preterplu.		<i>lati essent vel fuissent</i> , they might, could, should, or ought to had been born, or suffered.
		future.		<i>lati erunt vel fuerint</i> , they may, or can be born, or suffered hereafter.
			Pluraliter.	

Q. But why do you form the Potential Mood in these irregular Verbs, and not the Subjunctive, especially because there is no Potential Mood set down, is it not therefore an error in so doing?

A. No; for these Verbs irregular have both the Potential and Subjunctive Moods which are formed like the Optative, and do only differ in signification, and sign of the Mood.

Q. Why are not the Potential and the Subjunctive Moods express'd, as well as the Optative?

A. Only for brevity's sake, and for no other reason.

Q. Of what Conjugation are the Verbs *Ea* and *Queo*?

A. Of the fourth Conjugation.

Q. Are they formed like Verbs in *o*, of the fourth Conjugation, throughout all Moods and Tenses?

A. No; they make *ibam* and *quibam* in the Preterimperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, and *ibo* and *quibo* in the Future Tense, and in Gerunds, they make *eundi*, *do*, *dum*, *queundi*, *do*, *dum*.

Q. What Tenses are formed from the Preterperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood?

A. The

9. The Preterpluperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, the Preterperfect Tense, the Pieterpluperfect Tense, and the Future Tense, of the Optative, the Potential, and the Subjunctive Moods, and the Preterperfect Tense, and the Preterpluperfect Tense of the Infinitive Mood.

Give an Example.

From *Amavi*, the Preterperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, are formed *amaveram*, (the Preterpluperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood) *amaverim*, (the Preterperfect Tense) *amavissem*, (the Preterpluperfect Tense) *amavero*, (the Future Tense of the Optative, the Potential, and the Subjunctive Moods) *amavisse*, (the Preterperfect Tense, and Preterpluperfect Tense of the Infinitive Mood.)

10. *How are Verbs Impersonals declined?*

1. Throughout all Moods and Tenses in the Voice of the third Person Singular.

Give an Example.

1. Delectat, delectabat, delectavit, delectaverat, delectabit, delectare.

2. *How is decet declined?*

1. Decet, decebat, decuit, decuerat, decebit, decere.

2. *Are there any Impersonals of the Passive Voice?*

1. Yes.

2. *Give an Example of a Verb Impersonal of the Passive Voice.*

1. Studetur.

2. *How is Studetur declined?*

1. Studetur, studebatur, studitum est vel fuit, studitum erat vel fuerat, studebitur, studeri.

2. *What Sign have Verbs Impersonals commonly before their English?*

1. The Sign (*it*) as it delighteth, *delectat*, it becometh not, *non decet*.

Of

The

Of the Participles.

Q. **W**HAT is a Participle?

A. A Participle is a part of Speech derived from a Verb.

Q. What doth a Participle take part of?

A. It takes part of a Noun, and also part of a Verb, and part both of a Noun and Verb together.

Q. Wherein doth a Participle take part of a Noun?

A. In Gender, Case and Declension; for as a Noun hath Gender, Case and Declension, so hath a Participle.

Q. Wherein doth a Participle take part of a Verb?

A. In Tense and Signification; for as a Verb hath Tense and Signification, so hath a Participle.

Q. Wherein doth a Participle take part both of Noun and Verb?

A. In Number and Figure; for as a Noun and a Verb have Number and Figure, so hath a Participle.

Q. How many kinds of Participles are there?

A. Four; one of the Present Tense, one of the Preter Tense, one of the Future in *rus*, and another of the Future in *dus*.

Q. How do you know a Participle of the Present Tense?

A. A Participle of the Present Tense hath his English ending in *ing*, as loving, teaching, reading, hearing, and his Latin ends in *ans* or *ens*, as *amans*, *docens*, *legens*, *audiens*.

Q. From whence is a Participle of the Present Tense formed?

A. From the Preterimperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing the last Syllable into *ns*.

Q. Give an Example.

A. From *amabam*, the Preterimperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, is formed the Participle of the Present Tense *amans*, by changing the last Syllable *bam* into *ns*, as *ama-bam*, *ama-ns*.

Q. What

What Participle is amans ?

A Participle of the Present Tense, because it ends in *ans* in the Latin, and in *ing* in the English.

How do you know a Participle of the Future in rus ?

A Participle of the Future in *rus*, always ends in *rus*, in the Nominative Case Singular, and betokens to do like the Infinitive Mood of the Active Voice.

Give an Example of a Participle of the Future in rus.

Amaturus, to love, or about to love, englished like the Infinitive Mood *amare*.

From whence is a Participle of the Future in rus formed ?

From the later Supine, by putting thereto *rus*.

Give an Example.

From *doctus*, the latter Supine, is formed *docturus*, the Participle of the Future in *rus*.

How do you know that docturus is a Participle of the Future in rus ?

Because it ends in *rus*, and signifies to do like the Infinitive Mood Active.

How do you know a Participle of the Preterperfect Tense ?

A Participle of the Preterperfect Tense hath his English ending either in *d*, *t*, or *n*; as loved, taught, slain; and his Latin ends either in *tus*, *sus*, or *xus*, as *amatus*, *visus*, *nexus*; one ends in *uus*, as *mortuus*.

Whence is a Participle of the Preterperfect Tense formed ?

From the later Supine, by putting thereto *s*, as from *lectus* the latter Supine is formed *lectus*, the Participle of the Preter Tense.

How do you know that lectus is a Participle of the Preter Tense ?

Because it ends in *tus* in the Latin, and in *d* in the English.

How do you know a Participle of the Future in dus ?

A Participle of the Future in *dus*, betokeneth to suffer, like the Infinitive Mood of the Passive Voice, as *amandus*, to be loved, englished like *amari*, the Infinitive Mood Passive.

2. *Whence*

Q. Whence is a Participle of the Future in *dus* formed?

A. From the Genitive Case of the Participle of the Present Tense.

Q. Give an Example.

A. From *amantis*, the Genitive Case of the Participle of the Present Tense, is formed *amandus* the Future in *dus* by changing the last Syllable *tis* into *dus*, as *aman-tis* *aman-dus*.

Q. How do you know that *amandus* is a Participle of the Future in *dus*?

Q. Because it ends in *dus*, and hath the signification of the Infinitive Mood Passive.

Q. Hath the Participle of the Future in *dus* always the signification of the Infinitive Mood Passive?

A. No; sometimes it hath the signification of the Participle of the Present Tense; as *legendis veteribus proficit* in reading old Authors thou dost profit.

Q. You say that Participles are derived from Verbs; tell me then how many Participles are derived from a Verb Active, and from a Verb Neuter, which have the Supine?

A. Two; one of Present Tense, and another of the Future in *rus*.

Q. Give an Example.

A. From the Verb Active *amo*, is derived *amans*, the Participle of the Present Tense, and *amaturus* the Participle of the Future in *rus*; and from *curro*, the Verb Neuter, are derived *currens*, the Participle of the Present Tense; and *kursurus* the Participle of the Future in *rus*.

Q. But how if the Verb Active or Neuter want the Supines? how many Participles are then derived from them?

A. Only one, and that's a Participle of the Present Tense.

Q. Why so?

A. Because the Participle of the Future in *rus*, is formed from the later Supine, so that if the Supines be wanting, there can be no Future in *rus*, because no Supine to form it from.

Q. Give an Example.

A. From

From the Verb Active *metuo*, which wants the Supines, is formed only *metuens*, the Participle of the Present Tense; and from *strideo*, the Verb Neuter, which wants the Supines, is formed only *stridens*, the Participle of the Present Tense.

How many Participles are derived from a Verb Passive, whose Active hath the Supines?

Two; one of the Preter Tense, and another of the Future in *dus*.

Give an Example.

From the Verb Passive *amor*, whose Active *amo* hath the Supines, are derived *amatus*, the Participle of the Preter Tense; and *amandus* the Participle of the Future in *dus*.

But how many Participles are derived from a Verb Passive, whose Active wants the Supines?

Only one; a Participle of the Future in *dus*; as from *metuor* the Verb Passive, whose Active *metuo* wants the Supines, is formed only *metuendus*, a Participle of the Future in *dus*.

Why hath it not the Participle of the Preter Tense?

Because the Verb Active *metuo* wants the Supines, from which the Participle of the Preter Tense is formed.

How many Participles be derived from a Verb Deponent?

Three; one of the Present Tense, one of the Preter Tense, and one of the Future in *rus*.

Give an Example.

From *auxilior* the Verb Deponent is derived *auxilians* the Participle of the Present Tense, *auxiliatus* the Participle of the Preter Tense, *auxiliaturus* the Participle of the Future in *rus*.

When will a Verb Deponent form a Participle in *dus*?

When it governs an Accusative Case.

Give an Example.

From *loquor* a Verb Deponent, which will govern an Accusative Case, cometh *loquendus* a Participle of the Future in *dus*.

How many Participles are derived from a Verb Compound?

A. Four.

A. Four; as from *largior* a Verb Commune cometh *largiens* the participle of the present Tense, *largiturus* a participle of the future in *rus*, *largitus* a participle of the preter Tense, and *largiendus*, a participle of the future in *dus*.

Q. What are the participles declined like?

A. Like Nouns Adjectives, some of three Articles, & some of three Terminations.

Q. How many participles be declined like Nouns Adjectives of three Articles?

A. Only one, a participle of the present Tense.

Q. Give an Example.

A. Amans.

Q. Decline amans.

A.

Singular.	{	Nom. hic, hæc & hoc amans.
		Gen. hujus amantis.
		Dat. huic amanti.
		Acc. hunc & hanc amantem, & hoc amans.
		Voc. ô amans.
		Abl. ab hoc, hac & hoc amante, vel amanti.

Plural.	{	Nom. hi & hæ amantes, & hæc amantia.
		Gen. horum, harum & horum amantium.
		Dat. his amantibus.
		Acc. hos & has amantes, & hæc amantia.
		Voc. ô amantes, & ô amantia.
		Abl. ab his amantibus,

Q. How many participles are declined like Nouns Adjectives of three Terminations?

A. Three; a participle of the preter Tense, a participle of the future in *rus*, and a participle of the future in *dus*.

Q. Give an Example severally.

A. Amatus, amata, amatum, of the preter Tense; *amaturus*, *amatura*, *amaturum*, of the future in *rus*; *amandus*, *amanda*, *amandum*, of the future in *dus*.

Q. Decline amatus.

Nom. amatus, amata, amatum.
Gen. amati, amatæ, amati.
Dat. amato, amatæ, amato.
Acc. amatum, amatam, amatum.
Voc. amate, amata, amatum.
Abl. amato, amata, amato.

Nom. amati, amatæ, amata.
Gen. amatorum, amatarum, amatorum.
Dat. amatis.
Accu. amatos, amatas, amata.
Voc. amati, amatæ, amata.
Abl. amatis.

Decline amaturus.

Nom. amaturus, amatura, amaturum.
Gen. amaturi, amaturæ, amaturi.
Dat. amaturō, amaturæ, amaturō.
Acc. amaturum, amaturam, amaturum.
Voc. amature, amatura, amaturum.
Abl. amaturō, amatura, amaturō.

Nom. amaturi, amaturæ, amatura.
Gen. amaturōrum, amaturarum, amaturorum.
Dat. amaturis.
Acc. amatueros, amaturas, amatura.
Voc. amaturi, amaturæ, amatura.
Abl. amaturis.

Decline amandus.

Nom. amandus, amanda, amandum.
Gen. amandi, amandæ, amandi.
Dat. amando, amandæ, amando.
Acc. amandum, amandam, amandum.
Voc. amande, amanda, amandum.
Abl. amando, amanda, amando.

Pluraliter

Pluraliter.	Nom.	amandi, amandæ, amanda.
	Gan.	amandorum, amandarum, amandorum.
	Dat.	amandis.
	Acc.	amandos, amandas, amanda.
	Voc.	amandi, amandæ, amanda.
	Abl.	amandis.

Of an Adverb.

2. **W**HAT is an Adverb?

A. An Adverb is a part of Speech joined to Verbs most commonly.

2. Why are Adverbs joined to Verbs?

A. To declare their Signification.

2. How many kinds of Adverbs are there?

A. Twenty four.

2. Which be they?

- A. 1. Adverbs of time; as *hodie*, to day, &c.
2. Of place, as *ubi* where, *ibi* there, &c.
3. Of number, as *semel* once, *bis* twice, &c.
4. Of order, as *inde*, from thence, &c.
5. Of asking, or doubting, as *cur* why, &c.
6. Of calling, as *heus* ho, *ô soho*, &c.
7. Of affirming, as *certe* certainly, &c.
8. Of denying, as *non* no, *haud* scarcely, &c.
9. Of swearing, as *pol* by *Pollux*, &c.
10. Of exhorting, as *eja* well, *age*, go to, &c.
11. Of flattering, as *sodes* I pray thee, &c.
12. Of forbidding, as *ne* not.
13. Of wishing, as *utinam* I wish, &c.
14. Of gathering together, as *simul* together, &c.
15. Of parting; as *seorsim*, asunder, &c.
16. Of choosing; as *potius*, rather, &c.
17. Of a thing not-finished; as *pene*, almost, &c.
18. Of shewing; as *en*, lo; *ecce*, behold, &c.
19. Of doubting; as *forſan*, perhaps, &c.
20. Of chance; as *forte*, by hap, &c.
21. Of likeness; as *ſic*, ſo, *ſicut*, as, &c.

Of quality ; as *bene*, well ; *male*, ill, &c.

Of quantity ; as *multum*, much, &c.

Of comparison ; as *tam*, so ; *quam*, as, &c.

What Adverbs be compared ?

Some which be derived from Nouns Adjectives and prepositions.

What are they ?

Docte, learnedly, derived from the Adjective *doctus* ; *fortiter*, valiantly, from the Adjective *forte* ; *prope*, nigh, from the Preposition *prope*.

Compare *docte*.

Docte, learnedly ; *doctius*, more learnedly ; *doctissime*, most learnedly.

How is the Adverb *fortiter* compared ?

Fortiter, valiantly ; *fortius*, more valiantly ; *fortissime*, most valiantly.

How is the Adverb *prope* compared ?

Prope, near ; *propius*, more near ; *proxime*, most near, nearest.

When are Prepositions turned into Adverbs ?

When they be put without their Case that they properly govern, they are called (or turned into) Adverbs.

Give an Example or two.

Qui ante non cavet, post *dolebit* ; *ante* being put without its Case, is turned into an Adverb, and being set without a Case, it is not a Preposition, but an Adverb.

Of a Conjunction.

WHAT is a Conjunction ?

A. A part of Speech that joineth Words and Sentences together.

How many kinds of Conjunctions are there ?

Twelve.

2. Which

Q. Which be they?

- A. Of Conjunctions, some be 1. Copulatives, as *et* and; *que* and *&c.*
 2. Disjunctives, as *aut*, or; *ve* or, *&c.*
 3. Discretives, as *sed*, but; *quidem*, indeed, *&c.*
 4. Causals, as *nam*, for; *namque*, for, *&c.*
 5. Conditionals, as *si*, if; *sin*, but if, *&c.*
 6. Exceptives, as *ni*, unless; *nisi* except, *&c.*
 7. Interrogatives, as *ne* whether or no, *&c.*
 8. Illatives, as *ergo*, therefore; *ideo*, therefore, *&c.*
 9. Adversities, as *etsi* although, *&c.*
 10. Redditives to the same, as *tamen*, yet, *&c.*
 11. Electives, as *quam*, as; *ac*, as; *atque*, and, *&c.*
 12. Diminutives, as *saltem*, at the least, *&c.*

Of a Preposition.

Q. WHAT is a Preposition.

A. A part of Speech most commonly set before other parts of Speech.

Q. How is a Preposition set before other parts of Speech?

A. Two ways, either in Apposition, as *ad patrem*, secondly in Composition, as *indoctus*.

Q. When is a Preposition set in Apposition?

A. When it is set before a Case and governs it, as *ad patrem*.

Q. When is a preposition set in Composition?

A. When it is joined with another word, as *indoctus*.

Q. What Cases do Prepositions govern?

A. Prepositions do commonly govern an Accusative or Ablative Case, seldom any other.

Q. How many Prepositions do govern an Accusative Case?

A. Thirty two, *ad* to, *apud* at, *ante* before, *adversus* against, *cis* *citra* on this side, *circum* *circa* about, *contra* against, *erga* towards, *extra* without, *in* within, *inter* between, *infra* beneath, *juxta* beside

or nigh to; *ob* for, *pone* behind, *per* by or through, *prope* nigh, *propter* for, *secundum post* after, *trans* on the further side, *ultra* beyond, *præter* besides, *supra* above, *circiter* about, *usque* until, *secus* by, *versus* towards, *penes* in the power.

What prepositions are set after their casual words, that is, those words that they govern?

Versus is set after his casual word, as *Londinum versus*, towards London, and so may *penes*, *tenes*, *cum*, and *usque* be set.

How many prepositions do govern an Ablative Case?

Fifteen, *a*, *ab*, *abs*, from or fro, *cum* with, *coram*, before or in presence, *clam* privily, *de*, *e*, *ex* of or from, *pro* for, *præ* before, or in comparison of; *palam* openly, *sine*, *absque* without, *tenus*, until, or up to.

What Case shall the casual word be, that is joined with *tenus*, if it be the plural Number?

It shall be the Genitive Case, and set before *tenus* as *aurium tenus* up to the ears, *genuum tenus*, up to the knees.

What are prepositions turned into, when they be set without their Case?

Into Adverbs, as before said in the Adverbs.

How many prepositions do govern sometimes an Accusative, and sometimes an Ablative Case?

Four; *in*, *sub*, *super*, *subter*, to which you may add, *clam* and *procul*.

When will the preposition *in* govern an Accusative Case?

When the word *in* is joyned to the sign *to*, or when the Preposition *in*, is Latin for *into*; as *in urbem*, into the City.

When will the preposition *in* govern an Ablative Case?

When the word *in* is put without the sign *to*; or when the Preposition *in*, is Latin for *in*; as *in te spes mea est*, my hope is in thee; *te* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *in*.

Q. Give an Example of the preposition *sub*, with an Accusative Case, and also with an Ablative.

A. *Sub noctem*, a little before night; *noctem* is the Accusative Case, governed of the Preposition *sub*; *sub Iudice lis est*, the matter is before the Judge; *Iudice* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *sub*.

Q. Give an Example of the preposition *super*, with an Accusative, and also with an Ablative Case.

A. *Super lapidem*, upon a stone; *lapidem* is the Accusative Case governed of the preposition *super*; as *super viridi fronde*, upon a green leaf; *fronde* is the Ablative Case, governed of the Preposition *super*.

Q. Give an Example of the preposition *subter*, with an Accusative and an Ablative Case?

A. *Subter terram*, under the earth; *terram* is the Accusative Case governed of the preposition *subter*; *subter aquis*, under the waters; *aquis* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *subter*.

Of an Interjection.

Q. **W**HAT is an Interjection?

A. A part of Speech which betokens a sudden Passion of the mind, under an Imperfect Voice.

Q. How is an Interjection used?

A. It is commonly put between other words (from whence also it hath its Name): There are but few proper Interjections, but any other word or words passionately interlaced in a Sentence, may stand for an Interjection.

Q. Which be Interjections of mirth?

A. *Evax*, ha brave; *vah*, ho.

Q. Which be Interjections of sorrow?

A. *Heu*, alas; *hei*, alas.

Q. What Interjection is of dread?

A. *Atat*, *Aha*.

Q. What of marvelling?

Papæ, O strange!
What of disdaining?
Hem, oh; vab, away.
What of shunning?
Apagè, be gone.
What of praising?
Euge, well done.
What of scorning?
Hui, whoo.
What of Exclamation?
Prob, o; prob fidem, O the Faith!
What of cursing?
Va, wo; malum, with mischief.
Which be Interjections of laughing?
Ha, ha, he.
What of calling?
Ebo, soho; ô ho; io, come hither.
What Interjection is of silence?
An, whist, &c.

Of the Concords.

HOW many Concords are there in Latin Speech for the due joyning of words in Construction?

Three.

What is the first Concord between?

The first Concord is between the Nominative Case and the Verb.

What is the second Concord between?

The second Concord is between the Substantive and the Adjective.

What is the third Concord between?

The third Concord is between the Antecedent and the Relative.

The First Concord.

Q. **W**HAT must you do when you have an English
ven to be made in Latin?

A. I must look out the principal Verb.

Q. How if there be more Verbs than one in a Sentence
which then is the Principal Verb?

A. The first is the Principal Verb, except it be the In-
nitive Mood, or have before it a Relative, as *the*
whom, *which*, or a Conjunction, as *ut*, *that*; *and*
when; *si*, *if*; and such others.

Q. What must you do when you have found the Verb?

A. I must ask the Question, *who* or *what*.

Q. And what is that word that answereth to the question
who or what?

A. The word that answereth to the question *who* or *what*
shall be the Nominative Case to the Verb.

Q. But how if the Verb be a Verb Impersonal?

A. Then it will have no Nominative Case.

Q. How shall the Nominative Case be set in making
construing of Latin?

A. Before the Verb generally.

Q. When is the Nominative Case set after the Verb,
after the sign of the Verb?

A. 1. When a question is asked, as *amas tu*? lovest thou
venitne Rex? doth the King come? *tu* is the Nomi-
nitive Case set after the Verb *amas*, and *Rex* is the N-
minative Case set after the Verb *venit*. 2. When
Verb is the Imperative Mood, as *ama tu*, love thou
amato ille, let him love; *tu* is the Nominative Case
after the Verb *ama*, and *ille* is the Nominative Case
after the Verb *amato*. 3. When the sign (*it*) or (*there*)
cometh before the English of the Verb, as *est Liber*
meus, it is my Book; *venit ad me quidam*, there
cometh one to me: *Liber* is the Nominative Case set after
Verb *est* and *quidam* is the Nominative Case set
the Verb *venit*.

Q. W

What Case must that word be which cometh next after the Verb, and answereth to the question whom or what?

It shall commonly be the Accusative Case.

When shall it be any other Case?

When the Verb properly governeth another Case.

Give an Example.

Sic cupis placere Magistro, if thou covetest to please thy Master; *utere diligentia*, use diligence: *Magistro* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *placere*; and *diligentia* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *utere*.

How doth a Verb Personal agree with his Nominative Case?

A Verb Personal agrees with his Nominative Case in the same Number, and in the same Person.

Give an Example.

Præceptor legit, the Master readeth; *legit* is the Verb Personal, agrees with the Nominative Case *Præceptor* in the same Number, and in the same Person.

How do you know that Præceptor is the Nominative Case with which the Verb legit agreeth?

Because it answereth to the question *who* or *what*.

Make it plain.

Præceptor legit, the Master readeth. Who readeth? the answer is, the Master readeth; whereby I know, that *Præceptor* is the Nominative Case, with which the Verb *legit* agrees.

How do you know that Præceptor is the third Person?

Because it is a Noun; for all Nouns, Pronouns, and Participles are of the third Person, except *ego* and *tu*.

Which of the Persons are most worthy?

The first Person is more worthy than the second or the third; and the second Person is more worthy than the third.

Is it needful to know which of the Persons is most, less, or least worthy?

Yes; because when two Nominative Cases Singular, of divers Persons, come together, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, the Verb must be put in

the Plural Number, and because it cannot be put in but one Person, it must be put in the most worthy Person.

Q. *Declare it more plainly by an Example.*

A. When the Nominative Cases are one of the first Person, and the other of the second, the Verb must be put in the first Person, because the first Person is most worthy; as *ego & tu sumus in tuto*, I and thou are in safety; the Verb *sumus* is put in the first Person, because it is most worthy.

How the Verb doth further agree with his Nominative Case, or with that which is put instead thereof, I refer you to *Syntaxis* explained.

The Second Concord.

Q. *WHAT doth the Adjective agree with?*

A. The Substantive; in the same Case, the same Gender, and the same Number.

Q. *When you have an Adjective, what must you do to the Substantive with which it agrees?*

A. I must ask this question, *who or what?* and that which answereth to the question *who or what*, is the Substantive with which the Adjective must agree.

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. *Amicus certus in re incerta cernitur*, a sure Friend is tried in a doubtful matter. *Certus* is the Adjective, and agrees with the Substantive *amicus*.

Q. *How do you know that the Adjective certus agrees with the Substantive amicus?*

A. Because *amicus*, a Friend, answereth to the question *who or what*, as a sure Friend, a sure *what?* the answer is, a sure Friend.

Q. *Which of the Genders is most worthy?*

A. The Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine or Neuter, and the Feminine Gender is more worthy than the Neuter.

Q. *When two Substantives Singular come together with a Conjunction*

Conjunction Copulative between them of divers Genders, how must the Adjective be put ?

A. In the Plural Number, and in the most worthy Gender.

Give an Example.

Rex & Regina beati, the King and the Queen are blessed : *Rex* and *Regina* are two Substantives Singular ; *beati* is the Adjective Plural, put in the Masculine Gender, because *Rex* is of the Masculine Gender, which is the most worthy.

The Third Concord.

WHAT doth the Relative agree with ?

A. With the Antecedent, in Gender, Number, and Person.

When you have a Relative, what must you do to find the Antecedent with which it must agree ?

I must ask the question who or what ? and that word which answereth to the question, is the Relative with which the Antecedent must agree.

Give an Example.

Vir sapit qui pauca loquitur, the Man is wise that speaketh few words : *qui* is the Relative, agreeing with the Antecedent *vir*, in Number and Person.

How do you know that qui agrees with the Antecedent Vir ?

Because *Vir* the Man, answers to the question *who* or *what* : as the Man is wise which, &c. who is wise which, &c. the answer is, the Man.

The Second Part

O F

Fundamenta Grammatices

E X P L A I N E D.

Propria quæ maribus, Examined and
made Plain.

*Propria quæ ma-
ribus.*

Q. **H**OW many kinds of proper Names belong to the Masculine Gender?

A. Five; 1. Of Heathenish Gods, as *Mars*, *Bacchus*, *Apollo*. 2. Of Men, as *Cæsar*, *Virgilius*. 3. Of Rivers, as *Tibris*, *Orontes*. 4. Of Months, as *October*. 5. Of Winds, as *Lybs*, *Notus*, *Auster*.

*Propria fæmine-
um.*

Q. How many kinds of proper Names belong to the Feminine Gender?

A. Five; 1. Of Heathenish Goddesses, as *Juno*, *Venus*. 2. Of Women, as *Anna*, *Philotis*. 3. Of Cities, as *Elis*, *Opus*. 4. Of Countries, as *Græcia*, *Persis*. 5. Of Islands, as *Creta*, *Britannia*, *Cyprus*.

Q. Are all Names of Cities of the Feminine Gender?

A. No; some are of the Masculine, some of the Neuter Gender, and one both of the Masculine and Neuter Gender.

Q. Give the several Examples.

A. These words, *Sulmo*, *Agragas*, and *Hippo*, (being names of Cities) though they should be of the Feminine Gender by *Propria fæmineum*, yet they shall be of the Masculine, by virtue of this particular Exception.

*Excipienda ta-
men.*

These five words, *Argos, Tibur, Præne-*

Reate, and Cære, (being names of Ci-

ties, also tho' they should be of the Femi-

ne Gender by *Propria fœmineum*, yet

they shall be of the Neuter, by virtue of this particular

Exception.

This one word *anxur*, being the name

of a City, tho' it should be of the Femi-

ne Gender by *Propria fœmineum*, yet it

shall be both Masculine and Neuter, by this particular Ex-

ception.

*Quadam neu-
tralia.*

*Et genus
Anxur.*

Q. How many general Rules are there for common names?

A. Four.

Q. Which is the first?

A. The common names of trees shall be

of the Feminine Gender; as *alnus, cupres-*

cedrus, by this Rule *Appellativa arbo-*

rum.

*Appellativa ar-
borum.*

Q. Are all names of trees of the Feminine Gender?

A. No; except this one word *spinus*, and

words ending in *aster*, that are com-

mon names of trees; as *oleaster*, tho' they

should be of the Feminine Gender, by

Appellativa arborum; yet they shall be of the Masculine

Gender by this particular Exception.

*Mas spinus,
Mas oleaster.*

Except also these five words, *filer, suber,*

robur and *acer*, being names of Trees,

tho' they should be of the Feminine Gen-

der, by *Appellativa arborum*; yet they shall be of the

Neuter Gender by this particular Exception.

*Et sunt neutra-
filer.*

Q. What is the second general Rule for common names?

A. The names of Birds, as *passer, hirun-*

do; the names of wild Beasts, as *tygris,*

leopardes; the names of Fishes, as *ostrea, ce-*

phædus, are of the Epicene Gender, by this

Rule, *Sunt etiam volucrum.*

*Sunt etiam vo-
lucrum.*

Q. What is the third general Rule for common

names?

G 4

A. All

A. All Nouns Substantives, whether they be Greek or Latin, Proper, or Common, that end in *um*, in the Nominative Case Singular, are of the Neuter Gender, except they be Names of Men or Women.

Q. What is the fourth general Rule for common Names?

A. All Nouns Substantives that are invariable or undeclined, shall be of the neuter Gender.

Sic invariable nomen.

Finis Regularum Generalium Appellativorum.

Q. HOW many special Rules are there?

A. There be three special Rules.

Q. Which is the first special Rule?

A. *Nomen non crescens Genitivo*, &c.

Q. What is the meaning of the first special Rule?

A. Nouns not encreasing in the Genitive Case Singular, that is, having no more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, than they have in the Nominative,

shall be of the Feminine Gender by the first special Rule, *Nomen non crescens*; as *hæc caro*, Gen. *hujus carnis*, &c.

Q. Are all Nouns of the Feminine Gender, that have no more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, than they have in the Nominative?

A. No; there are some of the Masculine, some of the Neuter, some of the Doubtful, and some of the Common of two Genders.

Q. What Nouns be of the Masculine Gender that do not encrease in the Genitive Case Singular?

A. All words ending in *a*, belonging to the first special Rule, that is, not encreasing in the Genitive Case Singular, signifying the Office or Trade of a Man, shall be of the Masculine Gender by this Example, *Mascula Nomina in a*, as *hic Scriba*, a Secretary; *hic Affectus*, a Page, &c.

Mascula nomina in a.

Q. How

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

A. Three; 1. The word must end in *a*. 2. It must signify the Office or Trade of a Man: And 3. It must belong to the first special Rule.

All words also ending in *as*, or in *es*, *Fundit in as & in es.* coming from the first Declension of the

Greeks, and those that are derived from them ending in *a*, as *satrapas, satrapa: athletes, athleta;* shall be of the Masculine Gender except from the first special Rule, by virtue of this particular exception, *Masculi Græcorum.*

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

A. Three; 1. It must end in *as* or in *es*: 2. It must be derived from a Greek Noun: 3. It must belong to the first special Rule.

Q. Are there any more Nouns (belonging to the first special Rule) of the Masculine Gender?

A. Yes, these three words, *verres, natus, and aqualis*, belonging to the first special Rule, shall be of the Masculine Gender by virtue of this Exception.

As also words derived from *as*, a pound weight, as *Centussis*, &c. tho' they should be of the Feminine Gender by the first special Rule, yet they shall be of the Masculine, by virtue of this particular exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Exception?

A. Two; 1. It must belong to the first special Rule. 2. It must be derived from *as*, signifying a pound weight.

Also these twenty four words, *lienis, callis, caulis, collis, follis, mensis, fustis, funis, panis, penis, crinis, ignis, castis, fassis, torris, sentis, piscis, unguis, vermis, vectis, postis* and *axis*; not encreasing in the primitive Case Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Mascula in er, in os, as logos; in us, as annus; belong to the first special Rule, shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. But are all words that end in *er, os, or us*, belong to the first special Rule, of the Masculine Gender?

A. No; these fifteen words, *mater, Faminei generis sunt. mus, domus, alvus, &c.* tho' they end in *er* or *us*, and belong to the first special Rule, they shall be of the Feminine Gender, by this Rule; excepted from the Rule *Mascula in*

His jungas os in us. Also all words belonging to the first special Rule ending in *os* in the Greek, in *us* in the Latin, as *papyrus*, and *antus*, and many others, tho' they should be of the Masculine Gender by *Mascula in er*, yet they be of the Feminine by this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word long to this Exception.

A. Three; 1. It must belong to the first special Rule. 2. It must end in *os* in the Greek: And 3. It must in *us* in the Latin.

Q. What Nouns be of the Neuter Gender, that do increase in the Genitive Case Singular?

A. Words that end in *e*, and make *Neutrum nomen in e.* in the Genitive Case Singular, not ending, as *mare*, Genitivo *maris*; *retis*, Genitivo *retis*, shall be of the Neuter Gender, excepted from the first special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word long to this Rule?

A. Three: 1. It must belong to the first special Rule. 2. It must end in *e* in the Nominative Case; And 3. It must make *is* in the Genitive Case.

Et quot in on vel in um. Also all words that end in *on*, or in *um*, as *barbiton*, *ovum*, not increasing in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Neuter Gender, excepted from the first special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

A. Two: 1. It must belong to the first special Rule: It must end in *on*, or in *um*, in the Nominative Case singular.

Also these two words, *hippomanes*, and *scæthes*, belonging to the first special Rule, shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Est neutrum hippomanes.

Also these two words, *virus* and *pelagus*, belonging to the first special Rule, tho' they should be of the Masculine Gender,

Et virus, pelagus.

by *Mascula in er*, yet they shall be of the Neuter, by virtue of this particular Exception.

This word *vulgus*, belonging to the second special Rule, tho' it should be of the Masculine Gender only, by *Mascula in er*,

Netrum modo, mas modo vulgus.

yet it should be both Masculine and Neuter, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. What Nouns be of the Doubtful Gender, that do not encrease in the Genitive Case Singular?

These words, *talpa*, *dama*, *canalis*, **hal-*

onis, *finis*, *clunis*, *restis*, *amnis*, *corbis*, *arquis*, and *anguis*, belonging to the first special Rule, tho' they should be of the Fe-

Incerti generis sunt talpa.

minine Gender, by *Nomen non crescens*, yet they shall be of the Doubtful Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Also these words, *penus*, *linter*, *specus*, (and *ficus* when signifies a Disease) *phaselus*, *lecythus*, *atomus*, *pharus*, and *Paradisus*, belonging to the first special Rule, tho' they should be of the Masculine Gender, by *Mascula in*, yet they shall be of the Doubtful, by virtue of this particular Exception.

* *Halcyonis* is scarcely read in the Nominative Case, but *halcyon*, and belongs to the third special Rule.

Q. What Nouns are of the Common of two Gender that do not encrease in the Genitive Case Singular?

A. All words ending in *a*, belonging to the first special Rule, compounded of *Compositum a* Verb, as *grajugena*, of *gigno*; *agricola* of *colo*, &c. shall be of the common of two Gender, by this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

A. Three: 1. It must belong to the first special Rule. 2. It must end in *a*: And 3. It must be compounded of a Verb. But *puerpera*, compounded of *puer* and *pario* is the Feminine Gender only.

Also these fourteen words, *senex*, *auiga*, *ga*, *verna*, &c. tho' they should be of the Feminine Gender, by *Nomen non crescentis* yet they shall be of the Common of Two by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. Tell me certainly how to know when a Noun belongs to the first special Rule?

A. When it doth not encrease in the Genitive Case Singular, that is, when a Noun hath no more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, than it hath in the Nominative.

Finis Regularum ad Primam Regulam Specialem Pertinentium.

Of the Second Special Rule.

Q. WHICH is the second Special Rule?

A. *Nomen crescentis penultima si Genitivi Syllaba acuta sonat*, &c.

Q. What is the meaning of the second Special Rule?

A. Nouns encreasing long in the last Syllable save of the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender by the second special Rule, *Nomen crescentis*, *Syllaba acuta*; as *hæc pietas*, Gen. *hujus pietatis*.

Q. Why do you say, *Nomen crescentis*, &c. *Syllaba acuta*?

A.

A. To distinguish it from the third special Rule, which begins like the second.

Q. What do you mean by encreasing in the Genitive Singular?

A. When there are more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular, then there are in the Nominative.

1. 2. 3. 1. 2. 3. 4.
as—*pi—e—tas*, Gen. *pi—e—ta—tis*, &c.

Q. What do you mean by encreasing long in the last syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular?

A. When the last Syllable save one, in the Genitive Singular is pronounced long, as *pietas*, Gen. *pietātis*; *virus*, Gen. *vir-tū-tis*.

Q. Are all Nouns of the Feminine Gender, that encrease long in the Genitive Case Singular?

A. No; some Nouns encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Doubtful and some of the Common of two Genders.

Q. What Nouns that encrease long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Masculine Gender?

A. These thirty words, *sal, sol, ren, car, vir, &c.* of one Syllable, being to the second special Rule that is, encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Mascula dicuntur monosyllaba.

Also all words ending in *n*, that have more Syllables than one in the Nominative Case Singular, encreasing long in the last syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender by this particular Exception.

Mascula sunt etiam.

How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

Three; 1. It must end in *n*: 2. It must have more than one Syllable in the Nominative Case: And 3. It must belong to the second special Rule.

And

A.

*Et in o signan-
tia corpus.*

And all words ending in *o*, signifying Body, as *leo, curculio, &c.* encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

A. Three; 1. It must end in *o*: 2. It must signify Body. And 3. It must belong to the second special Rule.

These three words also, *senio, ternio, sermo*, belonging to the second special Rule, shall be of the Masculine Gender by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. Are any other Nouns that encrease long in the last Syllable save one of the Genitive Case Singular, of the Masculine Gender?

A. Yes, Nouns that end in *er, or, os*, having more than one Syllable in the Nominative Case Singular, belonging to the second special Rule, tho' they should be of the Feminine Gender by *Nomen crescentis, &c.* Syllable *ba acuta*; yet they shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

A. Three; 1. It must end in *er, or, os*, as *crator, conditor, heros*: 2. It must have more than one Syllable in the Nominative Case Singular: And 3. It must belong to the second special Rule.

Also these three words, *torrens, nefrens, oriens*; and all words compounded of *den* a Tooth; as *bidens*, encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender, excepted from the second special Rule, *Nomen crescentis*.

*Adde gigas,
elephas, &c.*

Also these Nouns, *gigas, elephas, elephas, garmas, tapes, lebes, cures, magnas* (and *meridies*, of the fifth Declension) belong

ing to the second special Rule shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Also all Nouns compounded of *as*, a pound weight, as *dodras*, *semis*, &c. being to the second special Rule, shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

*Et quæ compo-
nantur ab asse.*

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule?

A. Three: 1. It must be compounded of *as*, a pound weight: 2. It must signify part of a pound: And 3. It must belong to the second special Rule.

Also these seven words, *Samnis*, *hydrops*, *pellicorax*, *thorax*, *vervex*, *phœnix*, and *ambyx*, encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

*Jungantur Mas-
cula Samnis.*

Q. But are all Nouns ending in *n*, in *er*, and in *or*, of the Masculine Gender?

A. No; these words, *Syren*, * *mulier*, *error*, and *uxor*, ending in *n*, *er*, and *or*, tho' they should be of the Masculine Gen-

*Sunt muliebri
genus.*

der, by *polysyllaba* in *n*, and *Mascula* in *er*, or *or*; yet they shall be of the Feminine Gender by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. What Nouns encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Neuter Gender?

A. These fifteen words, *mel*, *fel*, *lac*, &c. encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be the Neuter Gender excepted from the second special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception.

*Sunt neutralia
& hæc Mono-
syllaba.*

All words of more than one Syllable in the Nominative Case Singular ending in *al*, or in *ar*, as *capital*, *laquear*, belong-

*Et in al, poli-
syllaba in ar.*

* But the word *mulier* is rather of the third special Rule.

ing

ing to the second special Rule, shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word long to this Rule?

A. Three: 1. It must have more than one Syllable in the Nominative Case Singular: 2. It must end in *al*, in *ar*: And 3. It must belong to the second special Rule,

Neutrum haec & muliebre.

This word *haec*, belonging to the second special Rule, tho' it should be of the Feminine Gender only, by *Nomen crescit*, yet it shall be both Feminine and Neuter in the Singular Number, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. What Nouns that encrease long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of Doubtful Gender?

A. These twelve words, *python*, *serpens*, &c. encreasing long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, tho' they should be of the Feminine Gender by the second special Rule, yet they shall be of the Doubtful Gender by virtue of this particular Exception.

This word *dies*, tho' it be of the Doubtful Gender in the Singular Number,

— *Sunt dubia haec python*; yet it shall be only Masculine in the Plural Number, by this Rule—*Addē dies numero.*

2. What Nouns that encrease long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Common of two Gender?

A. These thirteen words, *parens*, *frons*, *infans*, *adolescens*, &c. and *frons*, &c. belonging to the second special Rule, shall be of the Common of two Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. Tell me how I may certainly know when a word belongs to the second special Rule?

A. When the Word or Noun encreaseth long in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, that it belongs to the second special Rule.

there are more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular than there are in the Nominative, and the last Syllable one in the Genitive Case Singular is pronounced

Regularum ad secundam Regulam Specialem pertinentium.

Of the Third special Rule.

WHICH is the third special Rule ?

A. *Nomen crescentis penultima si Genitivi sit ut sanguis, &c.*

What is the meaning of the third special Rule ?

Nouns encreasing short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Masculine Gender by the third special Rule — *Nomen crescentis, &c. sanguis, Gen. sanguinis.*

Why do you say *Nomen Crescentis, &c. Sit gravis,*

To distinguish it from the second special Rule, which begins like the third.

By encreasing you told me was meant when a Noun has more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular than it has in the Nominative ; but what do you mean by encreasing short ?

When the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular is pronounced short ; as — Nom. *hic sanguis, Gen. sanguinis.*

Are all Nouns that do increase short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular of the Masculine Gender ?

No ; some are of the Feminine, some of the Neuter, some of the Doubtful, and some of the Common of all Genders.

What Nouns that encrease short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Feminine Gender ?

A. All

Faminei generis *dinis* in the Genitive Case Singular, *fit hyperdisylla-* Nouns that end in *go*, making *gini-*
bon in do, &c. the Genitive Case Singular, having more than two Syllables in the Nominative Case Singular, increasing short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word long to this Rule ?

A. Three ; 1. It must end in *do*, or in *go*, in the Nominative Case Singular. 2. It must have more than two Syllables in the Nominative Case Singular : 3. It must belong to the third special Rule.

These thirteen words, *virgo*, *græca*, *Adjice virgo, &c.* *fides*, &c. increasing short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender also, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Also all Greek Nouns, ending in *as*, *in is*, that make *adis*, or *idis*, in the Genitive Case Singular, as *lampas*, Gen. *lampadis*; *jaspis*, Gen. *hujus jaspidis*, belong to the third special Rule, tho' they should be of the Masculine Gender by the third special Rule, yet they shall be of the Feminine by this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word long to this Rule ?

A. Three : 1. It must be a Greek Noun, and end in *as*, or in *is*, in the Nominative Case Singular : 2. It must make *adis*, or *idis*, in the Genitive Case Singular : 3. It must belong to the third special Rule.

This word *pecus*, belonging to the third special Rule, and making *pecudis*, in the Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender, by this particular Exception.

Also these eight words, *forfex*, *His forfex pellex,* *carex*, *supellex*, &c. increasing short in the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender, by this particular Exception.

The Singular, shall be of the Feminine Gender by this particular Exception.

Q. What Nouns that encrease short in the last Syllable one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Neuter Gender ?

A. All Nouns signifying a thing without Life, belonging to the third special Rule, *Est neutrale genus.*

ing in *a*, as *problema*; in *n*, as *omen*; in *us*, as *onus*; or in *ut*, as *jubar*; in *ur*, as *jecur*; in *us*, as *onus*; or in *ut*, as *acciput*; shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word belong to this Rule ?

A. Three : 1. It must signify a thing without Life : 2. It must belong to the third special Rule : And 3. It must end either in *a*, *en*, *ar*, *ur*, *us*, or *ut*.

But these two words *pecten* and *fursur*, *Mascula sunt pecten, fursur.*

they should be of the Neuter Gender, *Est Neutrale genus*, yet they shall be of the Masculine, by virtue of this particular Exception.

These thirteen words, *cadaver*, *verber*, *increasing short in the last Syllable* *Sunt neutra cadaver.*

one in the Genitive Case Singular, shall also be of the Neuter Gender, excepted from the special Rule, by virtue of this particular Exception.

These three words, *aquor*, *marmor*, *Neutra aquor, marmor.*

also be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

The word *pecus* belonging to the third special Rule, and making *pecoris* in the

Genitive Case Singular, shall be of the Neuter Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. What Nouns encreasing short in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Doubtful Gender ?

A. These fifteen words, *cardo*, *margo*, *cinis*, *Sunt dubii generis, cardo, margo, &c.*

belonging to the third special Rule, they should be of the Masculine Gen-

der,

der, by the third special Rule ; yet they shall be of Doubtful, by this particular Exception.

Q. What Nouns that do encrease short in the last syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, are of the Common of two Gender ?

A. These twenty two words, *vigil, exul, &c.* increasing short in the Syllable save one in the Genitive Case Singular, tho' they should be of the Masculine Gender by the third special Rule, yet they shall be of the Common of two, by this particular Exception.

Also all Nouns derived from Verbs, *Atque alia a verbis.* long to the third special Rule, shall be of the Common of two Gender, by virtue of this particular Exception.

Q. How many things are required to make a word long to this Rule ?

A. Two : 1. It must be derived of a Verb : And must belong to the third special Rule.

Q. How may I know certainly when a word belongs to the third special Rule ?

A. When there are more Syllables in the Genitive Case Singular than there are in the Nominative, and the last Syllable save one in the Genitive Singular is pronounced long.

Finis Regularum quæ ad Tertiam Regulam calem pertinent.

Of Adjectives.

Q. **W**HAT Gender are all Nouns of one Gender, which have but one ending in the Nominative Case Singular ?

A. Adjectives that have but one ending in the Nominative Case Singular, shall be both Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter Genders, so that all Genders are comprehended.

der that one ending; as Nom. *hic, hæc & hoc felix* :
hæc & hoc audax, &c.

But how if Adjectives have two endings in the Nominative Case Singular?

Then the first ending shall be of the Sub gemina si
 mon of two Gender, and the second voce.

be the Neuter, as *hic & hæc omnis, & hoc omne.*

When a Noun Adjective hath three endings, in the Nominative Case Singular, what Gender shall those endings be of?

The first of these three endings shall be the Masculine, the second Feminine, *At si tres variant voces.*
 the third Ending the Neuter Gender,

1. 2. 3.
acer, sacra, sacrum.

Is there no Exception from the foregoing Rules?

These nine words, *pauper, puber,* are Adjectives by signification, but *At sunt quæ flexu.*
 antives by Declension.

What Nouns Adjectives have a different declining than all others in the Nominative and Vocative Cases Singular?

These eleven words, *campester, vocifer, &c.* as—Sing. Nom. *hic campester,* *Hæc proprium quendam.*
campestris, hoc campestre; or *hic & campestris, & hoc campestre;* and so of the rest.

A N

Alphabetical I N D E X

Of all the

Words belonging to the several Rules

I N

Propria quæ Maribus:

With the Article or Articles wherewith they are declined ; with the ending of the Genitive Cases Singular.

I Have not set down the Declension, presuming that ingenious Youth will know that by the ending of the Genitive Case Singular ; for when the Genitive ends in *i*, that Noun is of the first Declension ; if the Genitive ends in *is*, then 'tis of the second ; if it ends in *is*, 'tis of the third ; if in *ûs*, 'tis of the fourth ; and if in *ei*, then of the fifth Declension.

A.

A Byssus, *fi*, hæc.
acer, *cëris*, hoc.
acus, *cûs*, hæc.
adamas, *ntis*, hic.
adeps, *îpis*, hic vel hæc.
adolescens, *tis*, hic & hæc.
ador, *ôris*, hoc.

advēna, *æ*, hic & hæc.
æquor, *ôris*, hoc.
æs, *æris*, hoc.
affinis, *nis*, hic vel hæc.
Agragas, *ntis*, hic.
Agricola, *æ*, hic & hæc.
ales, *îtis*, hic & hæc.
alnus, *ni*, hæc.

us, alvi, hæc.
 zon, ōnis, hæc.
 is is, hic vel hæc.
 āis, hic vel hæc.
 is, is, hic vel hæc.
 a, æ, hæc.
 is, ni, hic.
 lotus, ti, hæc.
 tes, titis, hic & hæc.
 nūs, hæc.
 ar, ūris, hic aut hoc.
 llo, īnis, hic.
 endix, īcis, hæc.
 lis, is, hic.
 r, ōris, hæc.
 arnan, ānis, hic.
 s, ādis, hic & hæc.
 os, ti, hæc.
 os, gi, hoc.
 pex, īcis, hic & hæc.
 flis, hic.
 cla, æ, hic.
 eta, æ, hic.
 etes, æ, hic.
 nus, i, hic vel hæc.
 ps, cūpis, hic & hæc.
 x, dācis, hic, hæc &
 oc, n. adj. 3 Articles.
 r, gūris, hic & hæ.
 ga, gæ, hic & hæc.
 r, tri, hic.
 or, thōris, hic & hæc.
 is, hic.

B.

Achar, chāris, hæc.
 Bacchus, chi, hic.
 iton, ti, hoc.
 beffis; hic.
 ns, entis, hic.

bifrons, ontis, hic & hæc.
 bombyx, bycis, hic.
 bos, vis, hic & hæc.
 Britannia, æ, hæc.
 bubo, ōnis, hic vel hæc.
 byffus, fi, hæc.

C.

C Acoëthes, this, hoc.
 cadaver, veris; hoc.
 calx, cis, hic vel hæc.
 callis, lis, hic.
 canalis, lis, hic vel hæc.
 canis, nis, hic & hæc.
 capital, is, hoc.
 capra, æ, hæc.
 car, caris, hic.
 caro, nis, hæc.
 cardo, dīnis, hic vel hæc.
 carex, rīcis, hæc.
 cassis, sis, hic.
 cassis, sīdis, da, ac. hæc.
 Cato, tōnis, hic.
 caulis, lis, hic.
 cedrus, dri, hæc.
 centussis, sis, hic.
 cetus, ti, hic.
 cicer, ēris, hoc.
 cinis, ēris, hic vel hæc.
 civis, vis, hic & hæc.
 clunis, nis, hic vel hæc.
 collis, collis, hic.
 colus, li, & lūs, hæc.
 comes, itis; hic & hæc.
 compago, gīnis, hæc.
 conditor, ōris; hic.
 conjux, jugis; hic & hæc.
 cor, cordis; hoc.
 corbis, corbis; hic vel hæc.
 costus, ti; hæc.

coxendix,

coxendix, īcis ; hæc.
 crater, tēris ; hic.
 Crēta, tæ ; hæc.
 Cres, tis ; hic.
 crinis, nis ; hic.
 crus, ris ; hoc.
 chryſtallus, li ; hæc.
 culex, īcis ; hic vel hæc.
 cupreſſus, fi ; hæc.
 curculio, ōnis ; hic.
 Cures, ētis ; hic.
 cuspis, īdis ; hæc.
 cuſtos, ōdis ; hic & hæc.
 Cyprus, ri ; hæc.

D.

D Ama, æ ; hic vel hæc.
 delphin, īnis ; hic.
 dies, ēi ; hic vel hæc.
 diphthongus, gi ; hæc.
 dodras, antis ; hic.
 domus, i, & ūs ; hæc.
 dulcedo, dīnis ; hæc.
 dux, ducis hic & hæc.

E.

E Lephas, ntis ; hic.
 Elis, īdis ; hæc.
 enſis, ſis ; hic.
 eques, quītis ; hic vel hæc.
 eremus, mi ; hæc.
 exlex, lēgis ; hic vel hæc.
 extorris, ris ; hic vel hæc.
 exul, ūlis ; hic & hæc.

F.

Felix, īcis ; hic, hæc &
 hoc : n. Adj. 3. Art.
 far, ris ; hoc.
 faſcis, cis ; hic.
 fel, fellis ; hæc.
 ficus, ūs ; hæc.

ficus, ci ; hic vel hæc.
 fides, dei ; hæc.
 flex, īcis ; hæc.
 finis, nis ; hic vel hæc.
 flos, ris ; hic.
 follis, lis ; hic.
 fons, ntis ; hic.
 forceps, īpis ; hic vel hæc.
 forſex, īcis ; hæc.
 funis, is ; hic vel hæc.
 fur, furis ; hic & hæc.
 fuſtis, is ; hic.

G.

G Aramas antis ; hic.
 gigas, gantis ; hic.
 gingeber, bēris ; hoc.
 glis, gliris ; hic.
 gorgon, ōnis ; hæc.
 grajugena, æ ; hic & hæc.
 grando, dīnis ; hæc.
 Græcia, æ ; hæc.
 grex, gregis ; hic.
 groſſus, fi ; hic vel hæc.
 grus, gruis ; hic vel hæc.

H.

HÆres ēdis, hic & hæc.
 halcyon, ōnis, hic & hæc.
 heros, rois, hic.
 hippomanes, nis, hoc.
 hirundo, dīnis, hæc.
 homo, īnis, hic & hæc.
 hospes, pītis, hic & hæc.
 hoſtis, is, hic & hæc.
 humus, mi, hæc.
 hydrops, drōpis, hic.
 hyems, emis, hæc.
 hyſtrix, trīcis, hæc.

pis, pīdis, hēc.
con, cōnis, hēc.
duum, pl. hēc.
cōris, hoc.
nis, hic.
ēgis hic & hēc.
ex, brīcis, hic vel hēc.
s, ntis, hic & hēc.
pres, prētis, hic & hēc.
itinēris, hoc.
āris, hoc.
īcis, hic & hēc.
ōnis, hēc.
nis, nis, hic & hēc.

L.

Ac, ētis, hoc.
lampas, ādis, hēc.
æ, hic.
ar, aris, hoc.
ēris, hoc.
ētis, hic.
us, thi, hic vel hēc.
nis, hic.
ibis, hic.
ēnis, hic.
enis, hic.
ūris, hic & hēc.
ācis, hic vel hēc.
tris, hic vel hēc.
e, hic.
gi, hic.

M.

Agnes, ētis, hic.
manus, nūs, hēc.
ris, hoc.
gīnis, hic vel hēc.
r, ōris hoc.
Martis, hic.
tyris, hic & hēc.

mas, aris, hic.
mater, tris, hēc.
mel, mellis, hoc.
meridies, diei, hic.
miles, lītis, hic & hēc.
mons, ntis, hic.
mos moris, hic.
mulier, ēris, hēc.
mus, muris, hic.

N.

NAtalis, lis, hic.
natrix, īcis, hic vel hēc.

nefrens, ntis, hic.
Notus, ti, hic.
nubes, bis, hēc.
nurus, rūs, hēc.
nycticorax, ācis, hic.

O.

OBex, bīcis, hic vel hēc.
obfes, sīdis, hic & hēc.
occiput, pītis, hoc.
October, bris, hic.
oleaster, tri, hic.
omen, mīnis, hoc.
omnis, hic & hēc, & omne,
hoc, No. adj. 3. art.
onus, nēris, hoc.
onyx, nycis, hic vel hēc.
opifex, ficis, hic & hēc.
Opus, opuntis, hēc.
orbis, bis, hic.
oriens, entis, hic.
Orontes, tis hic.
os, offis, hoc.
os, oris, hoc.
ostrea, æ, hēc.
ovum, i, hoc.

H

P.

Pampinus, ni hic vel hæc.
 panis, is, hic.
 papaver, ĕris, hoc.
 papyrus, ri, hæc.
 paradisus, si, hic vel hæc.
 parĕns, entis, hic & hæc.
 passer, ĕris, hic.
 patruelis, lis, hic & hæc.
 peſten, ĭnis, hic.
 pedes, ĭtis, hic & hæc.
 pelagus, gi, hoc.
 pellex, ĭcis, hæc.
 penis, is, hic.
 penus, i, ūs, hic vel hæc.
 perdix, dĭcis, hic vel hæc.
 perduelis, lis, hic & hæc.
 Persis, ĭdis, ac. da, hæc.
 pes, dis, hic.
 phaselus, li, hic vel hæc.
 pharus, ri, hic vel hæc.
 phoenix, nĭcis, hic.
 Philotis, ĭdis, hic.
 Phryx, rygis, hic.
 pietas, tātis, hæc.
 piper; pĕris, hoc.
 piscis, cis, hic.
 pons, tis, hic.
 porticus, ci, hæc.
 postis, tis, hic.
 præsĕs, sĭdis, hic & hæc.
 præsul, sŭlis, hic & hæc.
 præneste, tis, ab ti, hoc.
 præs, dis, hic.
 princeps, cĭpis, hic & hæc.
 problema, ātis, hoc.
 pugil, ĩlis, hic & hæc.
 pulvis, vĕris, hic vel hæc.
 pumex, ĭcis, hic vel hæc.
 pus, puris, hoc.

R.

Rabula, æ, hic.
 ramex, ĭcis, hic
 hæc.
 ren, renis, hic.
 restis, tis, hic.
 rete, tis, ab. ti, hoc.
 rex regis, hic.
 robur, ōris, hoc.
 ros, ris, hic.
 rudens, entis, hic vel hæc.
 rus, ruris, hoc.

S.

Sacer, cra, crum; N.
 3. ter.
 sacerdos, dōtis; hic & hæc.
 sal, falis; hic.
 Samnis, ātis; hic.
 sanguis, ĭnis; hic.
 sapphirus, ri; hæc.
 satrapa, æ; hic.
 satrapas, æ; hic.
 scrobs, bis; hic vel hæc.
 scriba, æ; hic.
 scurra, æ, hic.
 seges, gĕtis; hæc.
 semis, missis; hic.
 senex, nis; hic & hæc.
 senio, ōnis; hic.
 sentis, tis; hic.
 seps, pis; hic.
 Ser, Seris; hic.
 sermo, ōnis; hic.
 serpens, tis; hic vel hæc.
 ficer, ĕris; hoc.
 filer, ĕris; hoc.
 filex ĭcis; hic vel hæc.
 focrus, crŭs; hæc.
 sodalis, lis; hic & hæc.

fol, folis ; hīc.
 oror, rōris ; hēc.
 pecus, ūs ; hīc vel hēc.
 pinus, nī ; hīc.
 len, enis ; hīc.
 rps, pis ; hīc vel hēc.
 ber, ēris ; hoc.
 ulmo, ōnis ; hīc.
 pellex, ētilis ; hēc.
 is, suis ; hīc & hēc.
 modus, di ; hēc.
 ren, ēnis ; hēc.

T.

TAlpa, æ ; hīc vel hēc.
 tapes, ētis ; hīc.
 ges, ētis ; hēc.
 rnio, ōnis ; hīc.
 stis, tis ; hīc & hēc.
 orax, ācis ; hīc.
 rax, acis ; hīc.
 us, thuris ; hoc.
 ybur, bēris ; hīc.
 ybur, uris ; hoc.
 gris, gridis ; hēc.
 quis, quis ; hīc vel hēc.
 rens, rentis ; hīc.
 rris, ris ; hīc.

tribus, ūs ; hēc.
 Tros, trōis ; hīc.
 tuber, ēris ; hoc.

V.

VAnnus, nī ; hēc.
 vas, vadis ; hīc.
 vas, vasis ; hoc.
 vates, tis ; hīc & hēc.
 uber, ēris ; hoc.
 vectis, tis ; hīc.
 venter, tris ; hīc.
 Venus, ēris ; hēc.
 ver, veris ; hoc.
 verber, bēris ; hoc.
 verna, æ ; hīc & hēc.
 vermis, mis ; hīc.
 verres, ris ; hīc.
 vervex, vēcis ; hīc.
 vigil, gīlis ; hīc & hēc.
 vindex, dīcis ; hīc & hēc.
 vir, viri ; hīc.
 Virgilius, līi ; Voc. ōli ; hīc.
 vīrgo, gīnis ; hēc.
 virus, invariab. hoc.
 virtus, tūtis ; hēc.
 unguis, guis ; hīc.

Q U Æ G E N U S

Examined and Explained

Of Heteroclites.

Q. WHAT is an Heteroclite ?

A. An Heteroclite is such a Noun that vary or differ from the common manner of declining.

Q. How many kinds of Heteroclites are there ?

A. Three: 1. Varying or changing their Gender.
2. Deficient or wanting: 3. Redundant or abounding.

Of Heteroclites varying their Genders.

Q. HOW many ways do Heteroclites vary Gender ?

A. Six.

Q. What are the first that vary their Gender ?

A. *Pergamus* and *supellex* are of Feminine Gender in the Singular Number, and of the Neuter in the Plural as — *hæc Pergamus*, Gen. *Pergamæ*, *hæc supellex*, tilis, Plur. Nom. *hæc supellestilia*, rum, tilium.

I Fem. Sing.
Neut. Plur.

Plur. Nom. *hæc Pergamæ*, Gen. *horum Pergamæ*, *hæc supellex*, tilis, Plur. Nom. *hæc supellestilia*, rum, tilium.

Q. What are the second that vary in their Gender ?

A. T

4. These four words, *rastrum*, *fræ-*
filum, & *capistrum*, tho' they are of
 Neuter Gender in the Singular Num-
 yet they shall be both Masculine and
 in the Plural, by this Rule — *Dat prior bis neutris*
erum; as — *hoc rastrum*, *tri*; Plur. *hi rastri*, & *hæc*
ra; *hoc frænum*, *ni*; Plur. *hi fræni* & *hæc fræna*;
filum, *fili*; Plur. *hi fili* & *hæc fila*; *hoc capistrum*,
 Plur. *hi capistri* & *hæc capistra*.

2 Neut. Sing.
 Masc. and
 Neut. Plur.

2. What are the third that vary their Gender?

1. These two words, *Argos* and *Cæ-*
 tho' they be of the Neuter Gender
 the Singular Number, yet they shall
 of the Masculine Gender only in the
 al, by this Rule, — *Sed audi, Mascula duntaxat cælos*,
 as — *hoc Argos*, *gi*; Plur. Nom. *hi Argi*; *hoc*
lum, *li*; Plur. Nom. *hi Cæli*.

3 Neut. Sing.
 Masc. Plu.

2. What are the fourth that vary their Gender?

1. These four words, *nundinum*, *epu-*
balneum, and *delicium*, tho' they are
 the Neuter Gender, and second De-
 sion in the Singular Number, yet they
 be of the first Declension and Feminine Gender in the
 al, by this Rule, — *Neutra quidem primo*: as — *hoc*
linum, *ni*; Plur. Nom. *hæc nundinæ*, *narum*; *hoc*
um, *li*; Plur. *hæc epulæ*, *arum*; *hoc balneum*, *nei*;
hæc balneæ, *arum*; *hoc delicium*, *cii*; Plur. *hæc de-*
arum.

4 Neut. Sing.
 Fem. Plur.

2. What are the fifth that vary their Gender?

1. These eight words, *Mænalus*, *Isma-*
Dindymus, *Tartara*, *Taygetus*, *Tænara*,
ica, and *Gargarus*, tho' they are the
 culine Gender in the Singular Num-
 yet they shall be of the Neuter in the Plural Num-
 by this Rule, — *Hæc maribus dantur*: as *hic Mæ-*
li; Plur. Nom. *hæc Mænala*, Gen. *horum Mæna-*
 — and so of the rest.

5 Masc. Sing.
 Neut. Plu.

2. What are the sixth that vary their Gender?

6 Masc. Sing.
Masc. and Neut.
Plur.

A. These four words, *sibilus*, *locus*, and *Avernus*, tho' they are of the Masculine Gender in the Singular Number, yet they shall be both Masculine and Neuter in the Plural, by this Rule, — *At numerus huius generis his dabitur*, &c. as — *hic sibilus*, Gen. *hujus sibilus* Plur. Nom. *his sibilis* & *hæc sibila*. Gen. *horum sibilorum* and so of the rest.

2. Of Defective Heteroclites.

Q. W Herein are Heteroclites defective?

A. In Number or in Case.

Q. What are all Nouns defectives called that vary in Case?

A. Aptots.

Q. Give some Examples.

Qua nullum variant casum.

A. Sing. Nom. *hoc fas*, Gen. *fas*, Dat. *fas*. Nom. *hoc nil*, per omnes casus; this is all the Cases are alike; *hoc nil*, *hoc nihil*, *hoc instar*, per omnes casus.

Q. Are there any more?

A. Yes; some that end in *u*, and in *i*, as *hoc cornu*, *hoc genu*, per omnes casus in Sing. *hoc gummi*, *hoc frugi*; and so *Tempe*, *tot* and *quot*, have all the Cases alike in the Plural Number, as *hi*, *hæ* & *hæc Tempe*; *hi*, *hæ* & *hæc tot*; *hi*, *hæ* & *hæc quot*.

A tribus ad centum.

All Nouns of Number from three to hundred, are called Aptots.

Of Monoptots.

WHAT are those Nouns called that have but one Case?

They are called Monoptots.

Give an Example.

Ablat.	{	noctu.	{	injussu.	{	Fourth Declension.
		natu.		astu.		
ab hoc.		jussu.		promptu.		
				permissu.		

Acc. { *Astus* in the Plural Number.
Inficias in the Plural Number.

Of Diptots.

WHAT are Nouns called that have but two Cases?

A. They are called Diptots.

Q. Give some Examples.

A. Fors, spontis, plus, repetundarum, *Sunt Diptota quibus.*
 veris, verberis, suppetiæ, tantundem,
 impetis and vicem.

Q. Decline those Examples.

A. Nom. hæc fors. Abl. ab hac forte.

Gen. hujus spontis. Abl. ab hac sponte.

Nom. hoc plus. Gen. hujus pluris.

Gen. harum repetundarum. Dat. his repetundis.

Gen. hujus jugeris. Abl. ab hoc jugere.

Gen. hujus verberis. Abl. ab hoc verbere.

Nom. hæ suppetiæ. Acc. has suppetias.

Nom. hoc tantundem. Gen. hujus tantidem.

Gen. hujus impetis. Abl. ab hoc impete.

Acc. hanc vicem. Abl. ab hac vice.

Q. Are none of these words whole in the Plural Number?

Verberis atque vicem. *A.* These four, *verberis*, *vicem*, *pluribus*, and *jugere*, are whole in the Plural Number; as Plur. Nom. *hæc verbera*, *plures*, *plura*, *jugera*; *hæc verbera*, *plures*, *plura*, *jugera*, *horum jugerum*.

Of Triptots.

2. WHAT are nouns called that have but three Cases in the singular number?

Tres quibus inflectis casus. *A.* Nouns that have but three Cases in the singular number are called Triptots.

2. Give an Example.

A. As;

Sing. { *Gen.* hujus precis.
 Acc. hanc precem.
 Abl. ab hac prece. } *Plur.* hæ preces, &c.

Sing. { *Gen.* hujus opis.
 Acc. hanc opem.
 Abl. ab hæc ope. } *Plur.* hæ opes, &c.

2. Have *frugis* and *ditionis* but three Cases in the singular number?

At tantum re- frugis. *A.* *Frugis* and *ditionis* want only the nominative and vocative Cases singular.

As—*Gen.* hujus frugis. *Dat.* frugi. *Acc.* frugem. *Voc.* caret. *Abl.* ab hac fruge.

Gen. hujus ditionis, &c. *Plur.* hæ ditiones, &c.

2. How is the word *vis* declined?

Integra vox vis. *A.* The word *vis* only wants the dative Case, and is declined as followeth—
Nom. hæc vis. *Gen.* vis. *Dat.* car. *Voc.* o vis. *Abl.* ab hac vi. *Plur.* hæc res, &c.

Omnibus his mus-tilus. *Note,* That the singular number is perfect in all these foregoing words, the plural is whole.

2. W

2. What is the meaning of this Rule — *Quæ refertur, ut qui? &c.*

A. All Relatives, as *qui*; Interrogatives, as *ecquis*; Distributives, as *nullus, unus, quisque, quisque*; and Indefinites, as *quilibet, quicunque*; with all Pronouns (except *noster, nostras, meus, tuus*) do want the Vocative Case.

2. Decline the words belonging to the Rule.

A. *Nom. qui, quæ, quod. Gen. cujus. Voc. caret.*
Nom. ecquis, quæ, quod. Gen. cujus. Voc. caret.
Nom. nullus, a, um. Gen. nullius. Voc. caret.
Nom. neuter, tra, trum. Gen. neutrius. Voc. caret.
Nom. hic & hæc omnis, & hoc omne. Voc. caret.
Nom. quilibet, quælibet, quodlibet. Voc. caret.
Nom. alter, tera, um. Gen. alterius. Voc. caret.
Nom. ego. Gen. mei. Voc. caret.

2. Decline those four that have the Vocative Case.

A. *Nom. noster, tra, trum. Voc. noster, tra, trum.*
Nom. hic & hæc nostras, & hoc nostrate.
Gen. hujus, atis. Voc. o nostras & o nostrate.
Nom. meus, a, um. Voc. mi, mea, meum.
Nom. tu. Gen. tui. Voc. o tu.

2. What is the meaning of the Rule — *Propria cuncta res? &c.*

A. All proper names which have a retaining nature, do want the plural number — as *Mars, Cato, Gallia, Roma, Ida, Tagus, Lelaps, Parnassus* and *Bucephalus*. *Propria cuncta res? notes.*

2. Decline those nouns afore-named?

<i>Nom. hic Mars. Gen. hujus Martis.</i>	} Plur. caret.
<i>Nom. hic Cato. Gen. Catonis.</i>	
<i>Nom. hæc Gallia. Gen. Galliæ.</i>	
<i>Nom. hæc Roma. Gen. Romæ.</i>	
<i>Nom. hæc Ida. Gen. Idæ.</i>	
<i>Nom. hic Tagus. Gen. Tagi.</i>	
<i>Nom. hic Lælaps, Lælapis.</i>	
<i>Nom. hic Parnassus, Parnassi.</i>	
<i>Nom. hic Bucephalus. Gen. Bucephali.</i>	

*His frumenta
dubis.*

Also the names of Bread-Corn, Wheat, Barley ; of things sold by Weight and Measure. — As Tow, Wool, Herbs, Wine and Milk. Also the names of Metals. — As Gold, Silver, Brass, &c. do want the plural number.

Est ubi Pluralem But there is a time when they have the plural number, and when not.

2. What is the meaning of this Rule — *Hordea, farra, forum* ?

Hordea, farra, forum. A. These nouns, *hordea, farra, forum, mel, mulsum, defruta* and *thus*, are of the Neuter Gender in the singular number, having three like Cases only in the plural,

2. How are those words declined ?

A. Singulariter.

*Nom. hoc hordeum.
Gen. hujus hordei.*

*Nom. hoc far.
Gen. hujus farris.*

*Nom. hoc forum.
Gen. hujus fori.*

*Nom. hoc mel.
Gen. hujus mellis.*

*Nom. hoc mulsum.
Gen. hujus mulsi.*

*Nom. hoc defrutum.
Gen. hujus defruti.*

*Nom. hoc thus.
Gen. hujus thuris.*

Pluraliter.

*Nom. hæc hordea.
Acc. hæc hordea.
Voc. o hordea.*

*Nom. hæc farra.
Acc. hæc farra.
Voc. o farra.*

*Nom. hæc fora.
Acc. hæc fora.
Voc. o fora.*

*Nom. hæc mella.
Acc. hæc mella.
Voc. o mella.*

*Nom. hæc mulsa.
Acc. hæc mulsa.
Voc. o mulsa.*

*Nom. hæc defruta.
Acc. hæc defruta.
Voc. o defruta.*

*Nom. hæc thura.
Acc. hæc thura.
Voc. o thura.*

2. Ar

Q. Are there any other defective Heteroclites ?

A. Yes; there are some which are of the masculine Gender in the singular number and want the plural; some are of the feminine Gender in the singular and want the plural, and some of the neuter Gender in the singular and want the plural; contrarywise there are some nouns of the masculine Gender in the plural, some of the feminine Gender, and some of the neuter in the plural number which want the singular.

Q. What nouns are there of the masculine Gender in the singular number that want the plural ?

A. These nouns *hesperus*, *vesper*, *pontus*, &c. are of the masculine Gender *Hesperus* & *vesper*.
in the singular number, and want the plural.

Q. Decline the words of this Rule.

{	<i>Nom.</i> hic hesperus, ri, hic vesper, p̄ris.	}	Plur. caret
	hic pontus, ti; hic limus, limi.		
	hic fimus, mi; hic penus, ni.		
	hic sanguis, guinis; hic æther, ěris.		
	hic & hæc nemo. <i>Gen.</i> car. <i>Dat.</i> m̄ni.		
	<i>Acc.</i> hunc & hanc m̄nem. <i>Voc.</i> caret.		

Q. What nouns are of the feminine Gender in the singular number, that want the plural ?

A. These nouns, *pubes*, *salus*, *talio*, *infans*, *tuffis*, &c. are of the Feminine Gender in the singular number, and want the plural. — As, *Singula fœminei generis.*

{	<i>Nom.</i> hæc pubes, bis; hæc salus, lutis.	}	Plur. caret
	hæc talio ōnis; hæc indoles, lis.		
	hæc tuffis, fis. <i>Acc.</i> tuffim.		
	hæc pix, picis; hæc humus, mi.		
	hæc lues, is; hæc sitis, tis. <i>Acc.</i> sitim.		
	hæc fuga, æ; hæc quies, ětis.		
	hæc cholera, æ; hæc fames, mis.		
	hæc bilis, lis; hæc senectæ, æ.		
	<i>hæc juventus. Gen. juventutis.</i>		

Q. Do all the nouns in this Rule want the plural number?

A. No; these nouns *soboles* and *labes* and all nouns of the fifth Declension have three like Cases in the plural number except *res*, *species*, *facies*, and *dies*, which are whole in the plural number.

Q. Decline the forenamed nouns.

A. Sing. { *Nom.* hæc *soboles*, *lis.* *Plur. Nom.* hæc *soboles*.
Acc. has *soboles.* *Voc.* ô *soboles.*
Nom. hæc *labes*, *bis.* *Plur. Nom.* hæc *labes.* *Acc.* *labes.* *Voc.* ô *labes.*

Singulariter. { *Nom.* hæc *res.* *Gen.* *rei.* *Plur. Nom.* hæc *res.* *Gen.* *harum rerum,* &c.
Nom. hæc *species.* *Gen.* *speciëi.* *Plur. Nom.* *species.* *Gen.* *harum specierum,* &c.
Nom. hæc *facies.* *Gen.* *faciëi.* *Plur. Nom.* hæc *facies.* *Gen.* *harum facierum,* &c.
Nom. hæc *acies.* *Gen.* *aciëi.* *Plur. Nom.* hæc *acies.* *Gen.* *harum acierum,* &c.
Nom. hic vel hæc *dies.* *Gen.* *diëi.* *Plur. Nom.* *dies.* *Gen.* *horum dierum,* &c.

Q. Are there any nouns that are feminine in the singular, and want the plural?

A. Yes, To these words may be added *Istis multa solent muliebria.* many more feminines which want plural, as the names of Virtues and Vices:

As—

Singul. { *Nom.* hæc *stultitia,* æ.
Nom. hæc *invidia,* æ.
Nom. hæc *sapientia,* æ.
Nom. hæc *desidia,* æ. } Plural caret.

With many others, which we may observe in reading of Authors, which, upon some occasion, may be put in the plural number.

Q. What

2. What nouns are of the neuter Gender in the singular number, that want the plural ?

4. These nouns * *delicium*, *senium*, *lethum*, &c. are of the neuter Gender in the singular number, and want the plural. *Nec licet his neutris.*

2. Decline the words belonging to this Rule.

A.

Nom. hoc * *delicium*, *delicii*.
 hoc *senium*, *senii*.
 hoc *lethum*, *lethi*.
 hoc *cœnum*, *cœni*.
 hoc *salum*, *salii*.
 hoc *barathrum*, *barathri*.
 hoc *virus*. *Acc.* *virus*. *Voc.* o *virus*.
 hoc *vitrum*, *vitri*.
 hoc *viscum*, *visci*.
 hoc *penum*, *peni*.
 hoc *justitium*, *justitii*.
 hoc *nihilum*, *nihili*.
 hoc *ver*, *veris*.
 hoc *lac*, *lactis*.
 hoc *gluten* *glutinis*.
 hæc aut hoc † *halec*, *halēcis*.
 hoc *gelu* *invariabile*.
 hoc *folium*, *folii*.
 hoc *jubar*, *jubāris*.

* *Delicium*
 hath *deliciæ*
 in the plural.

Plur. caret.

† *Halec* makes
haleces in the
 plural number
 and is of the
 Fem. Gender.

2. What nouns are of the masculine Gender in the plural number, and want the singular ?

4. These nouns, *manes*, *maiores*, *canliberi*, &c. are of the masculine Gender in the singular number, and want the plural. *Mascula sunt tantum numero*

2. Decline

2. Decline the words belonging to this Rule.
A.

Singulari caret.

Dec.

Pluraliter Nominativo Hæ

- | | | | |
|---|----|-----------|-------------------------|
| { | 3. | manes. | Gen. horum manium. |
| | 3. | maiores. | Gen. horum majorum. |
| | 2. | cancelli. | Gen. horum cancellorum. |
| | 2. | liberi. | Gen. horum liberorum. |
| | 3. | antes. | Gen. horum antium. |
| | 3. | mensēs. | Gen. horum mensium. |
| | 3. | lemures. | Gen. horum lemorum. |
| | 2. | fasti. | Gen. horum fastorum. |
| | 3. | minores. | Gen. horum minorum. |
| | 3. | natales. | Gen. horum natalium. |
| | 3. | penates. | Gen. horum penatum. |
| | 2. | Gabii. | Gen. horum Gabiorum. |
| | 2. | Locri. | Gen. horum Locrorum. |

With many others of the like sort.

2. What nouns are of the feminine Gender in the plural number, that want the singular?

A. These nouns, *exuviae*, *phaleræ*, *grates*, &c. are of the feminine Gender in the plural number, and want the singular.

2. Hæ

How are the words declined which belong to this

Singulari caret.

1. Exuviæ.	}	exuviarum.
1. phaleræ.		phalerarum.
3. grates. <i>Acc.</i> grates. <i>Voc.</i> grates.	}	
1. manubiæ.		manubiarum.
4. idus.	}	iduum.
1. antiæ.		antiarum.
1. induciæ.	}	induciarum.
1. infidiæ.		insidiarum.
1. minæ.	}	minarum.
1. excubiæ.		excubiarum.
1. nonæ.	}	nonarum.
1. nugæ.		nugarum.
1. tricæ	}	tricarum.
1. calendæ.		calendarum.
1. quisquiliæ.	}	quisquiliarum.
1. thermæ.		thearum.
1. cunæ.	}	cunarum.
1. diræ.		dirarum.
1. exequiæ.	}	exequiarum.
1. feriæ.		feriarum.
1. inferiæ.	}	inferiarum.
1. primitiæ.		primitiarum.
1. plagæ.	}	plagarum.
1. valvæ.		valvarum.
1. divitiæ.	}	divitiarum.
1. nuptiæ.		nuptiarum.
3. lactes.	}	lactium.
1. Thæbæ.		Thæbarum.
1. Athænæ.	}	Athænarum.

Genitivo barum

which sort there are many more Names of Places.

2. What

Q. What nouns are of the neuter Gender in the plural number, that want the singular?

A. These nouns, *mœnia, tesqua*, &c. are of the neuter Gender in plural Number, and want the singular.

Q. How are the words declined that belong to Rule?

A.

Singulari caret.

Pluraliter Nom. hæc	{	2. 3. mœnia.	{	Genitivo borum.	{	mœniorum & ium.
		2. tesqua.				tesquorum.
		2. præcordia.				præcordiorum.
		2. lustra.				lustrorum.
		2. arma.				armorum.
		2. mapalia.				mapaliorum.
		2. bellaria.				bellariorum.
		2. munia.				muniorum.
		2. castra.				castrorum.
		2. iusta.				justorum.
		2. sponsalia.				sponsaliorum.
		2. rostra.				rostrorum.
		2. crepundia.				crepundiorum.
		2. cunabula.				canabulorum.
		2. exta.				extorum.
		2. effata.				effatorum.
		2. 3. bacchanalia.				bacchanaliorum & ium.

With others which may be added to this Rule.

Of Redundant Heteroclites.

Q. Wherein are Heteroclites Redundant or Abominable?

A. In Gender, Termination, Case, and Declension.

Q. What is the first Rule for Redundant Heteroclites?

A. *Hæc quasi luxuriant varias, &c.*

2. Give the meaning of this Rule.

1. These nouns following do abound, *Hæc quasi luxuriant.*
varying the Termination in the nominative Case, and changing the Gender.

2. Decline the nouns belonging to this Rule.

1. *Sing. Nam.*

Gen. hujus

Hoc Tonitrus,	tonitrus,	} Thunder.
Hoc Tonitru,	<i>invariabile.</i>	
Hic Clipeus,	clipei,	} a Buckler.
Hoc Clipeum	clipei,	
Hic Baculus,	baculi,	} a Staff.
Hoc Baculum,	baculi,	
Hoc Bacillum,	bacilli,	} the Meaning.
Hic Sensus,	sensûs,	
Hoc Sensum,	sensi,	} Tapestry.
Hoc Tapetum,	tapeti,	
Hoc Tapete, tis.	<i>Abl. tapeti,</i>	} a Point.
Hic Tapes,	tapetis,	
Hic Punctus,	puncti,	} Mustard Seed.
Hoc Punctum,	puncti,	
Hoc Sinapi,	<i>invariabile.</i>	} a Milk Vessel.
Hæc Sinapis,	sinapis,	
Hic Sinus,	fini,	} a Fault.
Hoc Sinum,	fini,	
Hæc Menda,	mendæ,	} Birdlime.
Hoc Mendum,	mendi,	
Hic Viscus,	visci,	} an Horn.
Hoc Viscum,	visci,	
Hoc Cornu,	<i>invariabile.</i>	} The Wing of an Army.
Hoc Cornum,	corni,	
Hic Cornus,	corni,	} an Event.
Hic Eventus,	eventi,	
Hoc Eventum,	eventi,	

with many other of the same sort.

2. What is the second Rule for Redundant Heteroclites?

1. *Sed tibi præterea quædam, &c.*

2. Give me the meaning of this Rule.

1. There

*Sed tibi præ-
terea.*

A. There are some nouns which are derived from the Greek, which make the Accusative Singular to end in [a] from which Accusative Cases come nouns of the

first Declension.

Q. Decline the Words that belong to this Rule.

A. *Nom.* hic Panther. *Gen.* Gen. thēris *Acc.* thēra.
Nom. hic Crater. *Gen.* tēris. *Acc.* tēra.
Nom. hęc Cassis. *Gen.* fidis. *Acc.* fida.
Nom. hic æther. *Gen.* thēris. *Acc.* thēra.

Q. Decline these Nouns that come from the Accusative Cases afore said.

A. *Sing. No.* { hęc Panthera. *Gen.* æ.
hęc Cratera. *Gen.* teræ.
hęc Cassida. *Gen.* fidæ.
hęc æthera. *Gen.* theræ.

Q. What is the third Rule for Redundant Heterocliton?

A. *Vertitur his reclus, sensus manet, &c.*

Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

A. The Termination of the nominative Case is varied in these nouns following, and have the same signification the same Gender.

Q. Give the Examples of this Rule.

A. *Singulariter Nom.* { hic Gibbus, bi, and hic Gibber, bēris.
hic Cacumis, and hic Cucumer, ēris.
hęc Stipis, stipis, and hęc Stips, stipis.
hic vel hęc Cinis, nēris, and hic vel hęc Ciner, ēris.
hic Vomis, mēris, and hic Vomer, mēris.
hęc Scobis, bis, and hęc Scobs, scobis.
hic vel hęc pulvis, ēris, and hic vel hęc pulver, ēris.
hic vel hęc pubes, is, and hic vel hęc puber, ēris.

Quibus addes. To which may be added nouns that end in [or] and in [os] in the nominative Singular, As,

Sing.

hic Honor, or Honos. *Gen.* honōris.

hic Labor, or Labos. *Gen.* labōris.

hæc Arbor, or Arbos. *Gen.* arbōris.

hic Odor, or Odos. *Gen.* odōris.

To which you may add these that follow.

hæc Apes, pis, or hæc apis, apis,

hæc Plebes, plebis, or hæc Plebs, plebis.

There are also many nouns derived from *Sunt quoque*

Greek, which vary the Termination *multa.*

the Nominative Case. As,

{ Delphin, phinis, and hic Delphinus, ni.

{ Elephas, antis, and hic Elephantus, elephantī.

{ Congrus, congrī, and hic Conger, congrī.

{ Meleagrus, gri, and hic Mealeager, gri.

{ Teucrus, cri, and hic Teucer, cri.

which you may add all Words of this sort which you with in reading.

What is the last Rule for Redundant Heteroclites?

These nouns following are of the second

fourth Declension in some Cases. — *Hæc simul Et quarti flexūs.*

hæc Laurus, ri, & ūs.

hæc Quercus ci, & cūs.

hæc Pinus, pini, & nūs.

hæc Ficus, ci, & ficus.

hæc Colus, li, & colūs.

hic vel hæc Penus, ni & nūs.

hæc Cornus, ni, & nūs.

hæc Lacus, ci, & cūs.

hæc Domus, mi, & mūs.

Are there any Redundant Adjectives?

Yes, but especially such as are de-

from those Substantives, — *viz.* — *Et quæ luxu-*

jugum, nervus, somnus, clivus, ani- *riant.*

limus, cera, frænum, and bacillum,

are either of three Articles, or of three Termina-

As, from *Arma*, signifying Weapons, comes

Inermus, ma, mum, or

Hic & hæc Inermis,

& hoc Inerme.

} Unarmed.

word *Hilarus* is seldom read, but *Hilaris* is common.

As, in

As, in Præsentî ; Examin'd and Explain'd.

As in Præsentî : First Conjugation.

2. **W**HAT is the meaning of this Rule As, in Præsentî ?
A. The Termination [*as*] in the second Person of the Present Tense, shall make [*avi*] in the Preterperfect Tense.

Q. Give some Examples.

A. No, n — as, n — avi, nare, nandi, nando, nantatum, natu, nans, naturus, *to Swim.*

Vocito, vocit — as, vocit — avi, vocitare, tandidum, tatum, tatu, tans, taturus, *to call often.*

Q. Do all Verbs in o, of the first Conjugation (as end in [*as*] in the second Person of the Present Tense) make [*avi*] in the first Person of the Preterperfect Tense?

A. No : Except these following.

Præf. Tense.	Preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	Supin.
Lavo, vas,	lavi,	lavare,	lotum,
Juvo, vas,	juvi,	juvare,	jutum,
Nexo, as,	nexui,	nexare,	nexum,
Seco, cas,	secui,	secare,	sectum,
Neco, cas,	necui,	necare,	nectum,
Mico, cas,	micui,	micare,	Sup. cas,
Plico, cas,	plicui,	plicare,	plicatum,
Frico, cas,	fricui,	fricare,	frictum,
Domo, mas,	domui,	domare,	domitum,
Tono, nas,	tonui,	tonare,	tonitum,

Tense.	Preterperf.	Infi. Mood.	Supines.
nas,	sonui,	sonare,	sonitum, tu.
o, pas,	crepui,	crepare,	crepitum, tu.
tas,	vetui,	vetare,	vetitum, tu.
bas,	cubui,	cubare,	cubitum, tu.
das,	dedi,	dare,	datum, tu.
stas,	steti,	stare,	statum, tu.

If a Verb simple of the first Conjugation ends in [avi] in the Preterperfect Tense, As in *Præsenti* is the Rule for it, but if it do not end in [avi] in the Preterperfect Tense, then you must say it is excepted from ——— *As* *Præsenti*.

Es, in *Præsenti*: Second Conjugation.

WHAT is the meaning of this Rule? Es in *Præsenti*?

A. The Termination [es] in the second Person of the Present Tense shall make [ui] in the Preterperfect Tense. — As,

creo, nigras, nigrui, nigrere, nigrendi, do, dum, Sum, caret, nigrens.

Do all Verbs in o, of the second Conjugation (as they end in [ui] in the second Person of the Present Tense) end in [ui] in the first Person of the Preterperfect Tense?

A. These Words following are excepted.

Tense.	Preterperf.	Infi. Mood.	Supines.
es;	jussi,	jubere,	jussum, su.
es,	sorbui, & p̄si,	sorbere,	sorptum, tu.
es,	mulsi,	mulcere,	mulsum, su.
es,	luxi,	lucere,	Sup. caret.
es,	sedi,	sedere,	sessum, su.
es,	vidi,	videre,	visum, su.

Prandeo,

Prandeo, es, { prandi,
&
pransus
sum vel fui, } prandere, { pransum,

Strideo, es,	stridi,	stridere,	Sup. car
Suadeo, es,	suasi,	suadere,	suasum, su.
Rideo, es,	risi,	ridere,	risum, su.
Ardeo, es,	arsi,	ardere,	arsum, su.

Q. What Verbs of the second Conjugation double the Syllable of the Preterperfect Tense?

A. These four, pendeo, mordeo, spondeo, and tondeo.

Pendeo, es,	pependi,	pendere,	pensum,
Mordeo, es,	momordi,	mordere,	morsum,
Spondeo, es,	spospon-di.	spondere,	sponsum,
Tondeo, es,	totondi,	tondere,	tonsum,

Q. If in Verbs of the second Conjugation, the Letter r come before geo, in the Present Tense, how shall the Preterperfect Tense end?

A. In si, — es, Urgeo, es, si, gere, urgendi, do, ursum, u, gens, furus.

Mulgeo, es, mulsi, and sometimes xi, mulgere, gendi, zum, mulctum, etu, mulgens, mulcturus.

Pres. Tense.	Preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	Supines
Frigeo, es,	frixi,	frigere,	Sup. care
Lugeo, es,	luxi,	lugere,	luctum, u.
Augeo, es,	auxi,	augere,	auctum, u.
Fleo, fles,	flevi,	fere,	fletum, u.
leo, les,	levi,	lere,	letum, tu.
deleo, es,	delevi,	delere,	deletum, tu.
pleo, ples,	plevi,	plere,	pletum, tu.
neo, nes,	nevi,	nere,	netum, tu.
maneo, es,	mansi,	manere.	mansum, u.
torqueo, es,	torxi,	torquere,	tortum & u.
hæreo, res,	hæsi,	hærerere,	hæsum, u.

Q. E

Q. How do the Preter Tenses of Verbs of the second Conjugation end, when the first Persons Singular end in *veo*?

A. In *vi*. — as *serveo, ves, vi, vĕre, vendi, do, dum, inis caret, fervens; niveo, ves, vi, & nixi, nivere vendi, dum, sup. caret, nivens; conniveo, ves, nivi, vĕre, vendi, dum, sup. caret, connivens; cieo, cies, civi, ciere, di, do, dum, citum, u, ens, turus; vicio, es, evi, ere, viendo, dum, vietum, tu, viens, turus.*

If a Verb simple of the second Conjugation ends in *ui*, in the Preterperfect Tense, *Es in Præsenti* is the Rule for declining it, but if it doth not end in *ui*, then it is excepted from — *Es in Præsenti*.

A general Rule.

Tertia Præteritum.

The Third Conjugation.

HOW do the Present Tenses of Verbs in *o*, of the third Conjugation end?

A. The Terminations of the Present Tense of Verbs of the third Conjugation are either in *Bo, Co, Do, Go, Ho, Mo, No, Po, Quo, Ro, So, Sco, To, Vo, Xo, Cio, Dio, Pio, Rio, Tio, or Uo.*

Q. How must Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *Bo* in the Present Tense?

A. In *Bi* — as, —

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
<i>ambo, is.</i>	<i>lambi.</i>	<i>lambĕre.</i>	<i>sup. caret.</i>

Q. Do all Words that end in *Bo*, in the Present, end in the Preterperfect Tense?

A. No — Except these following.

<i>scribo, bis.</i>	<i>scripsi.</i>	<i>scribere.</i>	<i>scriptum, u.</i>
<i>nube, bis.</i>	<i>nupsi.</i>	<i>nūbere.</i>	<i>nuptum, u.</i>
<i>ambo, bis,</i>	<i>cubui.</i>	<i>cumbĕre.</i>	<i>cubitum, u.</i>

Q. How

Co. Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in Co in the Present Tense?

A. In Ci — as —
vinco, is. | *vici.* | *vincere.* | *victum, u.*
parco, cis, { *peperci,* } *parcere.* { *sup. caret.*
 { *parsi.* }

Q. Do all Words that end in Co in the Present Tense end in Ci in the Preterperfect Tense?

A. No; Except —

dico, cis. | *dixi.* | *dicere.* | *dictum, u.*
duco, cis. | *duxi.* | *ducere.* | *ductum, u.*

Do. Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in di in the Present Tense?

A. In di — as, —

Pres. Tense	Pret. Tense	Infi. Mood.	Supines.
<i>mando is</i>	<i>mandi</i>	<i>mandere</i>	<i>mansum u</i>
<i>scindo is</i>	<i>scidi</i>	<i>scindere</i>	<i>scissum u</i>
<i>findo is</i>	<i>fidi</i>	<i>findere</i>	<i>fissum u</i>
<i>fundo is</i>	<i>fudi</i>	<i>fundere</i>	<i>fusum u</i>
<i>tundo is</i>	<i>tutudi</i>	<i>tundere</i>	<i>tunsum u</i>
<i>pendo is</i>	<i>pependi</i>	<i>pendere</i>	<i>pensum u</i>
<i>tendo is</i>	<i>tetendi</i>	<i>tendere</i>	<i>tensum u</i>
<i>pedo is</i>	<i>pepedi</i>	<i>pedere</i>	<i>peditum u</i>
<i>cado is</i>	<i>cecid</i>	<i>cadere</i>	<i>casum u</i>
<i>cædo is</i>	<i>cæcidi</i>	<i>cædere</i>	<i>cæsum u</i>

Do all Verbs that end in *do* in the Present Tense,
in *di* in the Preter Tense?

No—Except—

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
is	cessi	cedere	cessum u
is	vassi	vadere	vassum u
is	raffi	radere	raffum u
is	læffi	lædere	læssum u
is	lufi	ludere	lufum u
is	divissi	dividere	divissum u
is	trufi	trudere	trufum u
is	clausi	claudere	clausum u
is	plausi	plaudere	plausum u
is	roffi	rodere	roffum u

How do the Verbs of the third Con-
jugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *Go*.
in the Present Tense?

In *xi*—as—

gis	junxi	jungere	junctum u
-----	-------	---------	-----------

Do all Verbs that end in *go* in the Present Tense,
in *xi* in the Preter Tense?

No: Except when the Letter *r* comes before *Go* in
the Present Tense,—as—

is	sparsi	spargere.	sparsum u
cept also			
is	legi	legere	lectum u
is	egi	agere	actum u
is	tetigi	tangere	tactum u
is	punxi		
is	&	pungere.	punctum u
is	pupugi		
is	fregi	frangere	fractum u

Pango, when it is Latin for to make a gain, will make *pepigi* in the Preterperfect Tense; when it is Latin for to join, it will make *pegi*; but when it is Latin for to sing, it will make *panxi* in the Preterperfect Tense,—as—

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supine
pango is	pepigi	pangere	pactum
pango is	pegi	pangere	pactum
pango is	panxi	pangere	pactum

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *bo* in the Present Tense?

A. In *xi*—as—

traho is	traxi	trahere	tractum
veho is	vexi	vehere	vectum

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *lo* in the Present Tense?

A. In *ui*—as—

colo lis	colui	colere	cultum
----------	-------	--------	--------

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *lo* in the Present Tense, end in *ui* in the Preter Tense?

A. No.—Except—

psallo is	psalli	psallere	caret
fallo is	falli	fallere	falsum
vello is	velli	vellere	vulsum
	& vulsi		
fallo is	fefelli	fallere	falsum
cello is	ceculi	cellere	culsum
pello is	pepuli	pellere	pulsum

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *mo* in the Present Tense?

Me.

7. In *Ui*—as—

Pref.	Pret	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
no is	vomui	vomere	vomitum u

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *Mo* in the Present Tense, end in *Ui* in the Preter Tense?

A. No.—Except—

no is	emi	emere	emptum u
no is	compfi	comere	comptum u
no is	prompfi	promere	promptum
no is	dempfi	demere	demptum
no is	sumpfi	sumere	sumptum
no is	pressi	premere	pressum

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *No* in the Present Tense?

A. In *Vi*—as—

no is	fivi	finere	fitum u
no is	stravi	sternere	stratum u
no is	sprevi	spernere	spretum u
no is	crevi	cernere	cretum u

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *No* in the Present Tense, end in *Vi* in the Preter Tense?

A. No.—Except—

no is	tempfi	temnere	temptum u
no is	levi		
no is	lini	linere	litum u
no is	livi		
no is	genui	gignere	genitum u
no is	posui	ponere	positum u
no is	cecini	canere	cantum u

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *Po* in the Present Tense?

A. In *Pfi*—as—

no is	scalpfi	scalpere	scalptum
-------	---------	----------	----------

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *Po* in the Present Tense end in *psi* in the Preter Tense?

A. No—Except

Pref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
rumpo is	rupi	rumpere	ruptum
strepo is	strepui	strepere	strepitum
crepo is	crepui	crepere	crepitum

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *quo* in the Present Tense?

A. In *qui*—as—

linquo is	liqui	linquere	lictum
-----------	-------	----------	--------

Q. Do all Verbs that make *quo* in the Present Tense make *qui* in the Preter Tense?

A. No—Except—

coquo is	coxi	coquere	coctum
----------	------	---------	--------

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *ro* in the Present Tense?

A. In *vi*—as—

fero is	fevi	ferere	satum
quæro is	quæsi	quærere	quæsitum
tero is	trivi	terere	tritum

Q. Do all Verbs that make *ro* in the Present Tense make *vi* in the Preter Tense?

A. No—Except—

fero is	ferui	fertum u.	To set in order
verro is	verri & verfi	verrere	versum u
uro is	ussi	urere	ustum
gero is	gessi	gerere	gestum
curro is	cucurri	currere	cursum

2. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *so* in the Present Tense? *So.*

4. In *sivi*—as

Pref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Sup.
acervo is	accerfivi	accerfere	accerffitum
arceo is	arceffivi	arceffere	arceffitum
inceo is	inceffivi	inceffere	inceffitum
laceo is	laceffivi	laceffere	laceffitum

2. Do all Verbs that end in *so* in the Present Tense, end in *sivi* in the Preter Tense?

4. No—Except—

capio is	{ capessi & capeffivi }	capeffere	{ capeffum & capeffitum }
faceo is	faceffi	faceffere	faceffum
viso is	viffi	viffere	viffum
pinso is	pinfui	pinfere	pinffum

2. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *so* in the Present Tense?

4. In *vi*—as

pavo is	pavi	pascere	paftum
---------	------	---------	--------

2. Do all Verbs that end in *so* in the present Tense, end in *vi* in the Preter Tense?

4. No—Except

poposco is	popofci	popfcere	caret
didico is	didici	discere	caret
quifco is	quexi	quinifcere	caret

2. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, when the present Tense ends in *to*? *To.*

4. In *ti*—as

verto is	verti	vertere	verfum u
fitis is	fiti	fitere	fitum

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *to* in the Present Tense end in *ti* in the Preter Tense?

A. No—Except

Pres.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines
mitto is	missi	mittere	missum
peto is	peti or petivi	petere	petitum
sterto is	stertui	stertere	caret
meto is	messui	metere	messum
flecto is	flexi	flectere	flexum
pecto is	pexi & pexui	pectere	pexum
necto is	nexui & nexi	nectere	nexum

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *vo* in the Present Tense?

A. In *vi*—as

volvo is	volvi	volvere	volutum
----------	-------	---------	---------

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *vo* in the present Tense end in *vi* in the Preter Tense?

A. No—Except

vivo is	vixi	vivere	victum
---------	------	--------	--------

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *vo* in the Present Tense?

A. In *ui*—as

nexo is	nexui	nexere	nexum u
texo is	texui	texere	textum u

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *cio* in the Present Tense?

A. In

Q. In *Ci*—as

Pref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
is	feci	facere	factum u
is	jeci	jacere	jactum u

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *cio* in the Present Tense, end in *ci* in the Preter Tense ?

A. No—Except—

is	lexi	lacere	lectum u
is	spexi	specere	spectum u

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *Dio* in the Present Tense ?

A. In *di*—as

is	fodi	fodere	fossam u
----	------	--------	----------

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *Gio* in the present Tense ?

A. In *gi*—as

is	fugi	fugere	fugitum
----	------	--------	---------

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *Pio* in the Present Tense ?

A. In *pi*—as

is	cepi	capere	captum u
----	------	--------	----------

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *pio* in the Present Tense, end in *pi* in the Preter Tense ?

A. No—Except

is	cupivi	cupere	cupitum
is	rapui	rapere	raptum
is	{ sapui & sapivi	sapere	sapitum

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *rio* in the Present Tense?

A. In *ri*—as—

Pref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supine
pario is	peperi	parere	partum.

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *ti* in the Present Tense?

A. In *ti*—as—

quatio is	quassi	quater	quassum
-----------	--------	--------	---------

Q. How do Verbs of the third Conjugation end in the Preter Tense, that end in *uo* in the Present Tense?

A. In *ui*—as—

statuo is	statui	statuere	statutum
-----------	--------	----------	----------

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *uo* in the Present Tense end in *ui* in the Preter Tense?

A. No—Except

pluo is	{ plui pluvi	&	{ pluere fluere	{ pluitum fluxum
struo is	struxi		struere	structum
fluo is	fluxi		fluere	fluxum

Q. How do you know certainly the Rule for declining a Verb of the third Conjugation, seeing the Terminations are so various?

A. Mark how the first Person Singular ends in the Present Tense, (which will always be like some one of the Terminations foregoing) and so doth the Rule begin; if the Verb to be declined end in *bo*, as *lambo*; then *Bo fit Bi*, is the Rule for the Preterperfect Tense, and

all other Terminations ; but if the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb to be declined, do not end according to the Termination in the Rule, as—*Scribo*, because it doth not end in *Bi* in the Preterperfect Tense, but in *psi*, it is therefore excepted from *Bo fit Bi* ;—and so of all others.

Quarta dat is ivi.

Fourth Conjugation.

WHAT is the meaning of this Rule, *Quarta dat is ivi* ?

1. The Termination [*is*] in the second Person Singular of the Present Tense, shall make [*ivi*] in the Preter Tense.

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
scis	scivi	scire	scitum u

2. Doth the Termination [*is*] in the second Person of Present Tense, always make the Preter Tense to end [*ivi*] ?

3. No—Except

io is	veni	venire	ventum.
bio is	campsi	cambire	campsum
io is	rauci	raucire	rausum
io is	farfi	fartire	fartum
io is	farfi	fartire	fartum
io is	sepsi	sepire	septum
io is	sensi	sentire	sensum
io is	fulsi	fulcire	fultum
io is	hausi	haurire	haustum
io is	fanxi	fancire	sanctum
io is	vinxi	vincire	vinctum
io is	salui	salire	saltum
io is	amicui	amicire	amictum

These words, *cambivi*, *baurivi*, *amicivi*, *sepivi*, *sancivi*, *sarcivi*, and *salivi*, are seldom used in the Preterperfect Tense.

A general Rule.

If a Verb simple of the fourth Conjugation ends in *ivi*, in the first Person of the Preter Tense, *Quarta dat is ivi*, is the Rule for declining it; but if it do not end in *ivi*, in the Preter Tense, then you must say, it is excepted from *Quarta dat is ivi*.

Hactenus de Verborum Simplicium Præteritis.

Præteritum dat idem.

Of the Preterperfect Tense of Compound Verbs.

2. **W**HAT do you mean by a Simple, and what by a Compound Verb? Or what is the difference between a Simple and a Compound Verb?

A. A Simple Verb (or Word) is that, which is not join'd to, (or mixed with) any other word, or part of a Word; but is without all manner of composition:—as *docui*. A Compound Verb (or Word) is that which hath some other Word, Preposition, or Syllable joined with it, and so made one Word, which is called a Compound, as, *edocui*.

2. What Preterperfect Tense hath a Verb Compound?

A. A Verb compound hath the same Preterperfect Tense (generally) as a Verb Simple hath. As,

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
Simp. doceo es	docui	docere	doctum tu
Com. edoceo es	edocui	edocere	edoctum tu

But note, That the Syllable which is doubled in the Preterperfect Tense of the Simple Verb, is not doubled in the Preterperfect Tense of the Compound, except in these three, *Sed Syllaba semper.*

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
præcurro is	præcucurri	præcurrere	sum
excuro is	excucurri	excurrere	sum
repungo is	repupugi	repungere	ctum

Q. Do no other words double the Syllable in the Preterperfect Tense?

A. Yes, Some of the Compounds of *do*, *sto*, and *esco*.

Q. How doth the Preterperfect Tense of *plico* compound, when 'tis compounded with a Verb, or a Noun?

A. It makes *plicavi*, in the Preterperfect Tense, as,

applico as	supplicavi	supplicare	catum
multiplico as	multiplicavi	multiplicare	catum

Q. How if *plico*, be compounded with any thing else?

A. Then the Preterperfect Tense shall end in *ui*, or *vi*, as, —

applico as	ui or avi	applicare	catum
complico as	ui or avi	complicare	catum
replico as	ui or avi	replicare	catum
explico as	ui or avi	explicare	catum

Q. What do you say concerning the Compounds of *Oleo*?

A. Although the Simple Verb *oleo*, will make *olui* in the Preterperfect Tense, yet

all the Compounds thereof will make *olevi* in the Preterperfect Tense, except these following,

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines
redoleo es	redolui	redolere	redoliturum
suboleo es	subolui	subolere	suboliturum

Which will have the same Preterperfect Tense, as the Simple Verb *Oleo*.

pungo.

Q. How do the Compounds of *pungo* form their Preterperfect Tense?

A. All the Compounds of *pungo* will make *punxi*, the Preterperfect Tense, except only—

repungo is	{ repupugi & repunxi	repungere	punctum
------------	----------------------------	-----------	---------

natum à do.

Q. How do the Compounds of *do* when they be of the third Conjugation end in the Preterperfect Tense?

A. In *didi*—as.

credo is	credidi	credere	creditum
edo is	edidi	edere	editum
dedo is	dedidi	dedere	deditum
reddo is	reddidi	reddere	redditum
perdo is	perdidi	perdere	perditum
abdo is	abdidi	abdere	abditum
obdo is	obdidi	obdere	obditum
condo is	condidi	condere	conditum
indoo is	indidi	indere	inditum
trado is	tradidi	tradere	traditum
prodo is	prodidi	prodere	proditum
vendo is	vendidi	vendere	venditum

Q. Do all the Compounds of *do*, that are of the third Conjugation, end in *didi*, in the Preterperfect Tense?

A. No.—Except

abscondo is	abscondi	abscondere	absconsumum
-------------	----------	------------	-------------

Natum à sto.

Q. What do the Compounds of *sto* make in the Preter Tense?

A. T

1. The Compounds of *sto*, make *siti* in the Preter Tense—as

as | restiti | restare | restitum

Simple Verbs that change the first Vowel of the Present and Preter Tense into *e*, when they are compounded.

2. What Simple Verbs, when they are compounded, change the first Vowel of the Present and Preter Tense, into *e*?

These Simple Verbs, *damno*, *laeto*, *sacro*, *fallo*, *tracto*, *fatiscor*, *partio*, *carpo*, *patro*, *lo*, &c. When they are compounded *Verba hæc* change the first Vowel of the Present and Preter Tense into *e*.

3. Give an Example.

When [*con*] is put to the simple Verb *damno*, it becomes *condemno*, (not *condamno*) by changing the first Vowel in *damno*, which is [*a*] into *e*, and so of all the —as

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
damno as	condemnavi	condemnare	tum
laeto as	delectavi	delectare	tum
sacro as	consecravi	consecrare	tum
descendo is	descendi	descendere	sum
respergo is	resperfi	respergere	sum

4. Of what Conjugation are the Compounds of *pario*, how do they make their Preter Tenses to end?

The Compounds of *pario*, are of the Fourth Conjugation, and make *perui*, *Pario nata*. Preter Tense—as

aperio is	aperui	aperire	apertum
operio is	operui	operire	opertum

Q. Do all the Compounds of *pario*, make *perui* in Preter Tense?

A. No—Except

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supine
comperio is	comperi	comperire	compertum
reperio is	reperi	reperire	repertum

à pascò pavi.

Q. What form do the Compound *pascò* follow?

A. The Compounds of *pascò*, do follow the form the simple Verb, that is, they do not change the Vowel into *e*, as—

epasco is	epavi	epascere	epastum
-----------	-------	----------	---------

Q. Do none of the Compounds of *pascò* change the first Vowel into *e*, and make the Preter Tense to end in *i*?

A. Yes, these two, *compesco*, and *dispesco*, as,

compesco is	compescui	compescere	caret
dispesco is	dispescui	dispescere	caret

Of Verbs that change the first Vowel of the Present Tense and Preter Tense into *i*, when they be compounded.

Q. What Verbs change the first Vowel of the Present and Preter Tense into *i*, when they be compounded?

A. These Simple Verbs,—*habeo*,

Hæc habeo teo, salio, statuo, cado, lædo, when they be compounded change the first Vowel of the Present and Preter Tense into (*i*).

Q. Give some Examples.

A. *Co* (for *con*) being joined to *habeo*, makes *cohibeo* by changing the first Vowel (*a*) into (*i*)—as

cohibeo es	cohibui	cohibere	cohibitum
instituo is	institui	instituire	institutum
recido is	recidi	recidere	recasum

And so of the rest.

Q. Ha

How do the Compounds of *cano*, à *cano*
the Preter Tense to end? *natum.*

In *ui*, as——

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines.
cano is	concinui	concinere	concentum

What do you say of the Compounds of *placeo*?

The Compounds of *placeo*, change
first Vowel of the Present and Preter à *placeo*, *fic.*
se into *i*,——as

placeo es	displacui	displacere	displacitum
-----------	-----------	------------	-------------

except only these two following, which follow the form
the simple Verb, that is, they do not change the first
vowel into *i*.——as

complaceo es	placui	placere	complacitum
complaceo es	placui	placere	perplacitum

Do all the Compounds of *pango*, change the first
vowel of the Present and Preter Tense into *i*?

No. These four following, follow
form of the simple Verb, that is, they *Composita à*
not change the first Vowel into *i*—— *pango.*

pango is	}	pegi pangere	pactum u
compango is			
compango is			
compango is			

What do you say of the Compounds of *maneo*?

All the Compounds of *maneo* will
follow the form of the simple Verb, ex- à *maneo*
cept these four following, which change *mansi.*
first Vowel into *i*; and make the Pre-
ter Tense, to end in *ui*,——as

Pres.

Pref.	Pret.	Infin.	Supin.
præmineo es emineo es promineo es immineo es	nui	nere	caret

Q. What do you say of the Compounds of *scalpo*, *co*, and *salto*?

composita à scalpo, calco, salto. A. The Compounds of *scalpo*, *calco*, *salto*, change *a* into *u*. as,

exculpo is	exculpsi	exculpere	ptum
inculco as	inculcavi	inculcare	catum
resulto as	resultavi	resultare	tatum

Q. What do you say of the Compounds of *claudio*, and *lavo*?

Composita à claudio, quatio, lavo.

A. The Compounds of *claudio*, *quatio*, and *lavo*, cast away *a*. as,

occludo is	occlusi	occludere	occlusum
excludo is	exclusi	excludere	exclusum
percutio is	percussi	percutere	percussum
excutio is	excussi	excutere	excussum
proluo is	prolui	proluere	prolutum
diluo is	dilui	diluere	dilutum

Of Verbs that change the first Vowel of the Present Tense into *i*; but not of the Preter Tense when compounded.

Q. What Verbs, when compounded, change the first Vowel of the Present Tense into *i*, but not of the Preter Tense when compounded?

A. T

These Verbs, *ago, emo, sedeo, refrango*, &c. when they be compounded change the first Vowel of the Present, but not of the Preter Tense, as,—

Hæc si componas.

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supines
is	exegi	exigere	exactum
go is	refregi	refringere	refractum
o is	incepti	incipere	inceptum

But do all these Verbs change the first Vowel ?

No. These two Compounds of *Sed pauca no-*
perago, and *fatago*, do follow the *tentur.*
of the simple Verb, that is, they do
change the first Vowel into *i*.—as—

is	peregi	peragere	peractum
is	fatégi	fatagere	caret

What Compounds cast away the middle Syllable of Present Tense ?

Some of the Compounds of *ago*, *Atque ab ago*
ago, cast away the middle Syllable, *rego*.

de and *ago*, made *dego*, and *co* (for
and *ago*, make *cogo*, by casting away the middle Syl-
and *per* and *rego*, make *pergo*; and *sur* and *rego*,
furgo; by casting away the middle Syllable.—

is	degi	degere	caret
is	coëgi	cogere	coactum
is	perexi	pergere	perrectum
is	furrexi	furgere	furrectum

of which four words the middle Syllable of the
Tense is cast away.

2. What

Q. What do you say of the Compounds of *facio*?

A. The Verb *facio*, doth never change the first Vowel into *i*; except it be compounded with a Preposition, — as —

Pref.	Pret.	Inf.	Supine
olfacio is	olfeci	olfacere	factum
calfacio is	calfeci	calfacere	factum
inficio is	infeci	inficere	fectum

Q. What do you say of the Compounds of *lego*?

A. When the Verb *lego* is compounded with *re*, *se*, *præ*, *sub*, or *trans*, it keeps the first Vowel of the Present Tense, and makes *legi* in the Preter Tense, all the rest of the Compounds of *lego*, change the first Vowel into *i*; and make the Preter *lexi*. — as

intelligo is	intellexi	intelligere	lectum
diligo is	dilexi	diligere	lectum
negligo is	neglexi	negligere	lectum

Hactenus de Verborum Compositorum Præteritis

Of the Supines of Simple Verbs.

WHence are the Supines formed ?

The Supines are form'd from the
r Tenses of Verbs, which end either
Ci, Di, Gi, Li, Mi, Ni, Pi, Qui,
Si, Pfi, Ti, Vi, Ui, or Xi.

*Nunc ex præ-
terito discas.*

How doth the Supine end when the
r Tense ends in *bi* ?

Bi.

In *tum.* — as —

Pres.	Pret.	Infinitive	Supines.
bis	bibi	bibere	bibitum

How doth the Supine end, when the
r Tense ends in *ci* ?

Ci.

In *tum.* — as —

bis	vici	vincere	victum
	ici	icere	ictum
bis	feci	facere	factum
bis	jeci	jacere	jectum

How doth the first Supine end,
the Preter Tense ends in *di* ?

Di.

In *sum.* — as —

es	vidi	videre	visum u
bis	pandi	pandere	pansum u
es	fedi	federe	fessum u.
bis	scidi	scindere	scissum u
bis	fidi	findere	fissum u
bis	fodi	fodere	fossam u

et we must observe, that the Syllable
h is doubled in the Preter Tense, is
doubled in the Supine. — as

*Hic etiam ad-
vertas.*

pres.

Pres.	Pret.	Infin.	Supin.
tondeo es	totendi	tondere	tonsum
cædo is	cæcidi	cædere	cæsum
cado is	cecidi	cadere	casum
tendo is	tetendi	tendere	tensum
tundo is	tutudi	tundere	tunsum

2. Do all Verbs that end in *di*, in the Preter Tense end in *sum* in the Supines?

A. No. — Except —

pedo is	pepedi	pedere	peditum
do das	dedi	dare	datum

Gi.

2. How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tense ends in *gi*?

A. In *tum* — as —

lego is	legi	legere	lectum
pango is	pegi & pepigi	pangere	paſtum
frango is	fregi	frangere	fracſtum
tango is	tetigi	tangere	taſtum
ago is	egi	agere	actum
pungo is	pupugi	pungere	punctum
fugio is	fugi	fugere	fugitum

Li.

2. How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tense ends in *li*?

A. In *sum* — as —

fallo is	falli	fallere	faſum
pello is	pepuli	pellere	pulſum
cello is	ceculi	cellere	cuſum
ſallo is	feſelli	fallere	faſum
vello is	velli	vellere	vuſum

How doth the Supine end, when *Mi, Ni, Pi,*
Preter Tense ends in *mi, ni, pi* or *Qui.*

In *tum*—as—

ref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
is	emi	emere	emptum u
is	veni	venire	ventum u
is	cecini	canere	cantum u
is	cepi	capere	captum u
is	cœpi	cœpere	cœptum u
is	rupi	rumpere	ruptum u
is	liqui	linquere	lictum u

When the Preter Tense ends in *ri,* *Ri.*
must the Supine end?

In *sum*—as—

is	verri	verrere	versum u
----	-------	---------	----------

Doth the Supine always end in *sum,* when the
Preter Tense ends in *ri.*

No.—except

is	peperi	parere	partum u
----	--------	--------	----------

How doth the Supine end when the
Preter Tense ends in *Si.*

In *sum*—as—

visi	visere	visum u
misi	mittere	missum u

2. Doth

Q. Doth the Supine always end in *sum*, when the Preter Tense ends in *si*?

A. No. ——— except ———

Present T.	Preterperf.	Infi. Mood	Supines.
fulcio is	fulsi	fulcire	fultum u
haurio is	hausi	haurire	haustum
farcio is	farfi	farcire	factum
farcio is	farfi	farcire	factum
uro is	ussi	urere	ustum
gero is	gessi	gerere	gestum
torqueo is	torfi	torquere	tortum
			& torsum
indulgeo is	indulsi	indulgere	indultum
			& indulsum

Q. How do the Supines end, when the Preter Tense ends in *psi*.

A. In *ptum* ——— as ———

scribo is | scripsi | scribere | scriptum

Q. Doth the Supine always end in *ptum*, when the Preter Tense ends in *psi*?

A. No. ——— except ———

cambio is | campsi | cambire | campsum

Q. How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tense ends in *ti*?

A. In *tum*. ——— as ———

sto stas | steti | stare | statum u
sisto is | stiti | sistere | statum u

Q. Doth the Supine always end in *tum*, when the Preter Tense ends in *ti*?

A. No — except —

Present T.	Preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	Supines
to is	verti	vertere	versum u

Vi.

Q. How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tense ends in *vi*?

A. In *tum* — as —

flas	flavi	flare	flatum u
eo fcis	pavi	pascere	pastum u
eo as	lavi	lavare	lotum, &c.
eo es	favi	favere	fautum u
eo es	cavi	cavere	cautum u
eo is	sevi	serere	fatum u
eo is	lini	linere	litum
eo is	solvi	solvere	solutum u
eo is	volvi	volvere	volutum
multo is	singultivi	singultire	singultum
sepelio is	sepelivi	sepelire	sepultum

Q. Doth the Supine always end in *tum*, when the Preter Tense ends in *vi*?

A. No — except —

eo is	vænivi	vænire	vænum u
-------	--------	--------	---------

Vi.

Q. How doth the Supine end in the Preter Tense ends in *vi*?

A. In *itum* — as —

eo as	domui	domare	domitum
-------	-------	--------	---------

Q. Do

Q. Do all Supines end in *itum*, when the Preter Tense ends in *Vi*?

A. No ; Except Verbs that end in *Uo* in the Present Tense and in *Ui* in Preter Tense, shall end in *utum*, in the Supine — as —

Present T.	Preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
exuo is	exui	exuere	exutum u

Q. Do all Verbs that end in *uo* in the Present Tense and *ui* in the Preter Tense, end in *utum* in the Supine?

A. No ——— except ———

ruo is	rui	ruere	ruitum u
--------	-----	-------	----------

Q. Do all other Verbs that end in *ui* in the Present Tense, end in *utum* in the Supine?

A. No ——— except ———

fecer as	fecui	fecare	fectum u
neco as	necui	necare	nectum u
frico as	fricui	fricare	frictum u
misceo es	miscui	miscere	mixtum u
amicio is	amicui	amicire	amictum u
torreo es	torrui	torrere	tostum u
doceo es	docui	docere	doctum u
teneo es	tenui	tenere	tentum u
consulo is	consului	consulere	consultum u
alo is	alui	alere	altum } u
			& }
			alium } u
sallo is	salui	salire	saltum u
colo is	colui	colere	cultum u
occulo is	occului	occulere	occultum u
pinso is	pinsui	pinsere	pistum u
rapio is	rapui	rapere	raptum u
fero is	serui	serere	sertum u
texo is	texui	texere	textum

What Verbs make *sum* in the Supine, when the Preter Tense ends in *ui*?

These following,

Preter T.	Preterperf.	Infi. Mood	Supine
ces	censui	censere	censum u
is	cellui	cellere	cellum u
is	messui	metere	messum
es	patui	patere	passum
es	carui	carere	cassum

Except these two,

is	nexui	nexere	nexum
is	pexui	pexere	pexum

How doth the Supine end, when the Preter Tense ends in *xi*?

Xi.

In *sum* as

is	vinxi	vincire	vincitum
----	-------	---------	----------

these five following cast away *n* from the Supine.

is	finxi	ingere	fitum
is	minxi	ingere	mitum
is	pinxi	ingere	pitum
is	strinxi	stringere	strictum
is	rinxi	ingere	ritum

Do all Supines end in *sum*, when the Preter Tense ends in *xi*?

No; except,

flexi	flectere	flexum
plexi	plectere	plexum
fixi	figere	fixum
fluxi	fluere	fluxum

Of the Supines of Compound Verbs.

Compositum ut simplex, &c.

2. WHAT Supines have Compound Verbs?

A. The same Supine (generally) which Simple Verbs have — as —

lego, the Simple Verb makes *lectum*.

diligo, the Compound makes *dilectum*.

2. Is there always the same Syllable to them both?

A. No. — for —

Quamvis non eadem.

1. The Compounds of *tundum*, from *tundo*, make *tusum*, in the Supine, casting away *n*, as — *contusum*.

2. The Compounds of *ruitum*, from *ruo*, make *rutum* in the Supines, by casting away *i*, — as — *subrutum*.

3. The Compounds of *saltum*, from *salio*, make *sutum* in the Supines, by changing *a* into *u*, — as — *resutum*.

4. The Compounds of *fatum*, from *fero*, make *fitum* by changing *a* into *i*, — as — *insutum*.

2. What Supines, when they be compounded, change *a* into *e*?

A. These following — as —

Hæc captum factum.

captum the Simple, makes *inceptum*.

factum

jactum

raptum

cantum

partum

sparsum

carptum

fartum

The Simple makes the Compound,

defectum

injectum

direptum

concentum

impertum

respersum

decerptum

refertum

2. W

Q. What doth the Verb *edo*, to eat, when it is com-
manded, make in the Supine ?

A. The Verb *edo*, when 'tis com-
manded, doth not make *estum*, but *esum* *Verbum edo*
the Supine ; except *comedo*, which *com.*
makes both *estum* and *esum* ---- as ---- co-
do, edis, vel es, comedi, edere vel esse, comedendi, do,
comestum, esu, & comestum, tu, edens, esurus &
urus.

Q. What do you say of the Compounds of *nosco* ?

A. These two Compounds of *nosco* *A nosco tan-*
make *cognitum* and *agnitum* in the Supine, *tum.*

Pref.	Pret.	Inf. Mood.	Supines
<i>gnosco</i> is	<i>cognovi</i>	<i>cognoscere</i>	<i>cognitum</i>
<i>nosco</i> is	<i>agnovi</i>	<i>agnoscere</i>	<i>agnitum</i>

Q. What Supines do all the other Compounds of *nosco*
make ?

A. All the other Compounds of *nosco*, *Cætera dant*
make *notum* in the Supine — as *notum.*

<i>nosco</i> is	<i>ignovi</i>	<i>ignoscere</i>	<i>ignotum</i>
-----------------	---------------	------------------	----------------

Of the Preterperfect Tense of Verbs in *or*.

2. **F**rom whence do Verbs in *or* take their Preter Tense?

A. Verbs in *or* have no Preter Tense of their own, but do take their Preter Tense from the latter Supine by changing *u* into *us*, and by joyning *sum vel fui* to it—as from the latter Supine, by putting thereto *s*, and *sum vel fui* formed the Preter Tense of the Verb Passive *legor*.

2. Give an Example.

Present Tense.

Preter Tense.

A. *Legor, legëris, vel legëre; lectus sum vel fui.*
 Infin. Part. Part.
legi, lectus, legendus.

2. Are all Verbs in *or* Verbs Passive?

A. No; as some are Passives, so *At horum nunc* are Verbs Deponent, and some *est deponens.* are Verbs Commune; the difference between which is set down in the Examination of Verbs. I shall only note in this place, that Verbs Deponent Commune, have Gerunds and Supines like Actives.

2. Give some Examples.

A. Labor, laboris vel labëre, lapsus
Con. 3. vel fui, labi, labendi, do, dum, lapsus
 labens, lapsurus—to slide.

3. Patior, pateris vel patëre, passus sum vel fui, patiendi, do dum, passum, su, patiens, passurus—to endure.

3. Perpetior, perpeteris vel perpetëre, perpeffus vel fui, perpeti, perpetiendi, do, dum, perpeffum, petiens, furus—to suffer thoroughly.

2. Fateor, fatēris vel fatēre, fassus sum vel fui, fatēri, tendi, do, dum, fassum, u, fatens, fassurus, ——— *to confess.*
3. Confiteor, tēris, vel tēre, confessus sum vel fui, confiteri, tendi, do, dum, confessum, u, confitens, confessurus ——— *to confess.*
4. Diffiteor, tēris vel tēre, diffessus sum vel fui, diffiteri, tendi, do, dum, diffessum, u, diffitens, diffessurus ——— *to deny.*
5. Gradior, gradēris vel dēre, gressus sum vel fui, gradiendi, do, dum, gressum, gressu, gradiens, gressurus ——— *to go.*
6. Digredior, digredēris vel dēre, digressus sum vel fui, digrediendi, do, dum, digressum, gressu, digressus, gressurus ——— *to turn aside.*
7. Fatiscor, cēris vel cēre fessus sum vel fui, fatisci, di, do, dum, fessum, u, fatiscens, fessurus ——— *to be weary.*
8. Metior, metēris vel tēre, mensus sum vel fui, metiendi, do, dum mensum, u, metens, mensurus ——— *to measure.*
9. Utor, utēris vel utēre, usus sum vel fui, uti, utendi, dum, usum, u, utens, usurus ——— *to use.*
10. Ordior, ordīris vel ordīre, orditus sum vel fui, ordiendi, do, dum, orditum, u, ordiens, orditurus ——— *to weave.*
11. Ordior, dīris, vel ordīre, orsus sum vel fui, ordīri, tendi, do, dum, orsum, u, ordiens, orsurus ——— *to begin.*
12. Nitor, nitēris vel tēre, nifus vel nixus sum vel fui, nitendi, do, dum, nifum, u, vel nixum, u; nitens, nifus vel nixurus ——— *to endeavour.*
13. Ulciscor, ciscēris vel ciscēre, ultus sum vel fui, ulciscendi, do, dum, ultum, u, ulciscens, ulturus ——— *to revenge.*
14. Irascor, rascēris vel rascēre, iratus sum vel fui, irasci, di, do, dum, iratum, u, irascens, iraturus ——— *to be angry.*

2. Reor, reris vel rere, ratus sum vel fui, reri, rendi, do, dum, ratum, ratu, rens, raturus — *to suppose.*

3. Obliviscor, visceris, vel viscere, oblitus sum vel fui, oblivisci, obliviscendi, do, dum, oblitum, u, obliviscens, obliturus — *to forget.*

3. Fruor, eris vel ere, fructus vel fruitus sum vel fui, frui, fruendi, do, dum, fructum, u, vel fruitum, u, fruens, fructurus & fruiturus — *to enjoy.*

2. Misereor, sereris, vel serere, misertus sum vel fui, misereri, miserendi, do, dum, misertum, u, miserens, miserturus — *to pity.*

3. Tuor, tueris vel tuere, tuitus sum vel fui, tueri, tuendi, do, dum, tutum, u, vel tuitum, u, tuens, tuturus vel tuiturus — *to see.*

2. Tueor, tueris vel tuere, tuitus sum vel fui, tueri, tuendi, do, dum, tutum, u, & tuitum, u, tuens, tuturus & tuiturus — *to defend.*

3. Loquor, loqueris vel loquere, locutus sum vel fui, loqui, loquendi, do, dum, locutum, tu, loquens, locuturus — *to speak.*

3. Sequor, sequeris vel sequere, secutus sum vel fui, sequendi, do, dum, secutum, tu, sequens, secuturus — *to follow.*

4. Experior, experiris vel experire expertus sum vel fui, experiri, experiendi, do, dum, expertum, u, experiens, experturus — *to try.*

3. Paciscor, pacisceris vel paciscere, pactus sum vel fui, pacisci, paciscendi, do, dum; pactum, u, paciscens, pacturus — *to make a bargain.*

3. Nanciscor, cisceris, vel ciscere, nactus sum vel fui, nancisci, nanciscendi, do, dum, nactum, u, nanciscens, nactus — *to get.*

3. Apiscor, apisceris vel apiscere, aptus sum vel fui, apisci, apiscendi, do, dum, aptum, u, apiscens, apturus — *to obtain.*

3. Adipiscor, adipisceris vel adipiscere, adeptus sum vel fui, adipisci, adipiscendi, do, dum, adeptum, u, adipiscens, adepturus — *to get.*

3. Queror, querēris vel querēre, questus sum vel fui,
eri, querendi, do, dum, questum, u, querens, questurus
— *to complain.*

3. Proficiscor, ciscēris vel ciscēre, profectus sum vel fui,
ficisci, proficiscendi, do, dum, profectum, u, profici-
ens, profecturus — *to go forward.*

3. Expergiscor, giscēris vel giscēre, experrectus sum vel
fui, expergisci, expergiscendi, do, dum, experrectum, u,
pergiscens, experrecturus — *to raise.*

3. Comminiscor, niscēris vel niscēre, commentus sum
fui, comminisci, comminiscendi, do, dum, commen-
tus, u, comminiscens, commenturus — *to devise.*

3. Nascor, nascēris vel nascēre, natus sum vel fui, nasci,
cendi, do, dum, natum, u, nascens, naturus — *to
born.*

3. Morior, moriēris vel moriēre, & morēris vel morēre,
ortus sum vel fui, mori, moriendi, do, dum, Supinis
et, moriens, mortuus, moriturus, moriendus, — *to*

4. Orior, orīris vel orīre, ortus sum vel fui, orīri,
endi, do, dum, ortum, ortu, oriens, orturus — *to*
rise.



Præteritum Activæ & Passivæ.

Q. WHAT Verbs have two Preterperfect Tenses, one of the Active, and the other of the Passive Voice?

A. These that follow.

Con. Pres.	Preterperf.	Inf. Mood	Supines
1. <i>Cœno nas</i> <i>to sup.</i>	<i>cœnavi &</i> <i>cœnatus</i> <i>sum vel fui</i>	<i>cœnare</i>	<i>cœnatum</i>
1. <i>juro as</i> <i>to swear</i>	<i>juravi & ju-</i> <i>ratus sum</i> <i>vel fui</i>	<i>jurare</i>	<i>juratum</i>
1. <i>poto as</i> <i>to drink</i>	<i>potavi &</i> <i>potus sum</i> <i>vel fui</i>	<i>potare</i>	<i>otum, at</i>
1. <i>titubo as</i> <i>to stumble</i>	<i>titubavi &</i> <i>titubatus</i> <i>sum vel fui</i>	<i>titubare</i>	<i>titubatum</i>
2. <i>careo es</i> <i>to want</i>	<i>carui &</i> <i>causus sum</i> <i>vel fui</i>	<i>carere</i>	<i>causum &</i> <i>caritum</i>
2. <i>prandeo</i> <i>es</i> <i>to dine</i>	<i>prandi &</i> <i>pransus sum</i> <i>vel fui</i>	<i>prandere</i>	<i>pransum</i>
2. <i>pateo es</i> <i>to lie open</i>	<i>patui &</i> <i>passus sum</i> <i>vel fui</i>	<i>patere</i>	<i>passum</i>
2. <i>placeo es</i> <i>to please</i>	<i>placui &</i> <i>placitus</i> <i>sum vel fui</i>	<i>placere</i>	<i>placitum</i>
3. <i>fuesco is</i> <i>to accustom</i>	<i>fuevi &</i> <i>fuetus sum</i> <i>vel fui</i>	<i>fuescere</i>	<i>fuetum</i>

Pres. T.	Preterperf.	Infi. Mood	Supines
veneo is to be sold	{ venivi & venditus sum vel fui }	venire	{ venum
nubo is to be mar- ried	{ nupsi & nupta sum vel fui }	nubere	{ nuptum
mereor is vel e- re to de- serve	{ meritus sum vel fui, vel merui }	mereri	{ meritum

Q. What Impersonals may be added to
these, which have two preter Tenses, one
the Active, and the other of the passive
voice? *Adde li-
bet, &c.*

A. These following, — *libet, licet.*

1. *Tædet, pudet* and *piget*, as,

2. *Libet* present Tense.
libebat preterim.

{ libuit &
libitum est } preterp.
vel fuit
{ libuerat &
libitum
erat vel
fuerat } preterplu.

bit. Future
ere Infinitive Mood,
contenteth or liketh.

Licet present Tense
bat. preterim.

{ licuit &
licitum est } preterp.
vel fuit

{ licuerat &
licitum erat } preterplu.
vel fuerat
licebit Future
licere. Infinitive, *it is law-
ful*

2. *Tædet* present Tense.
tædebat preterimperfect.

{ tædui &
pertæsum
est vel fuit } preterp.

{ tæduerat &
pertæsum
erat vel
fuerat } preterplu.

tædebit Future
tædere Infinit. *it irketh*

2. pudet present Tense
pudebat preterimperf.

{ pudit &
puditum est } preterp.
vel fuit

{ puduerat
& puditum } preter-
erat vel plu.
fuerat

pudebit Future

pudere Infinit. *it shameth.*

2. piget. present Tense
pigeat preterimperfect.

{ piguit &
pigitum } preterp.
est vel fuit

{ piguerat
& pigitum } preter-
erat vel plu.
fuerat

pigebit Future

pigere Infinit. *it grieves*

Of the Preterperfect Tense of Verbs Neuters Passives.

Neutro passivum.

2. **W**HAT preterperfect Tense
have Verbs *Neuter Passive*

A. A Verb Neuter Passive hath the passive preter perfect
as —

2. gaudeo es <i>to be glad.</i>	{ gavisus sum vel fui }	{ gaudere }	gavisum
3. fido is <i>to trust.</i>	{ fesus sum vel fui }	{ fidere }	fisum
2. audeo es <i>to dare.</i>	{ ausus sum vel fui }	{ audere }	aufum
fio fis <i>to be made.</i>	{ factus sum vel fui }	{ fieri }	factus facien- dus
2. soleo es <i>to be wont.</i>	{ solitus sum vel fui }	{ solere }	solitum

Of Verbs that borrow their Preter Tense from other Verbs.

WHAT Verbs borrow their preterTense from others?

Quædam præteritum.

A. These that follow.

Verbs Inceptives in *sco*, take their preter Tense, from their primitive Verbs, and stand for the same primitive Verbs from whence they borrow their preterTense, as—

peſco, to begin to be warm.

veſco, to begin to be hot.

cerno, to discern.

ſutio, to ſhake.

ſcio, to ſmite.

piſco, to piſs.

ſeo, to fit.

ſolvo, to lift up.

ſum, to be.

ſuſtineo, to bear.

ſto, to make to ſtand.

ſum, to be mad.

ſor, to feed.

ſano, to heal.

ſolvo, to melt.

ſuſcipo, to remem-

ber.

repeo, to be warm.

ſerveo, to be hot.

video, to ſee.

concutio, to ſhake.

percutio, to ſmi.

miſco, to piſs.

ſedeo, to fit.

ſuffero, to bear.

ſuo, to be.

ſtulo, to bear.

ſto, to ſtand.

inſanio, to be mad.

paſcor, to be fed.

medico, to be hea-

led.

liqueſco, to be mel-

ted.

recordor, to be re-

membred.

2. How are these Verbs declined ?
A.

present Ten.	preterperf.	Infi. Mood.	Supines
2. tepesco is	tepui	tepescere	caret
3. fervesco is	fervi	fervescere	caret
3. cerno is	vidi	cernere	visum
3. quatio is	concussi	quaterere	concussum
4. ferio is	percussi	ferire	percussum
3. meio is	minxi	meiere	miectum
3. fido is	sedī	fidere	fessum
3. tollo is	fustuli	tollere	sublatum
sum es	fui	esse futurus	
fero fers	tuli	ferre	latum
3. sisto is	stiti	sistere	statum
3. furo is	insanivi	furere	caret

vescor	{ pastus	vesci	pastum
3. vesceris	sum		
vel cere	vel fui		

2. medeor	{ medicatus	mederi	medicatum
eris vel ere	sum vel fui		

3. liquor	{ liquefactus	liqui	liquefactus
eris vel ere	sum vel fui		

3. reminif-	{ recordatus	reminisci	recordatum
cor eris vel	sum vel		
ere	fui		

Of Verbs wanting their Preterperfect Tense.

WHAT Verbs want their preter Tense?
A. These following.

Present Ten.	preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
vergo is		vergere	
ambigo is		ambigere	
glisico is		gliscere	
fatisco is	caret	fatiscere	caret
polleo es		pollere	
nideo es		nidere	

2. What other Verbs do want the preter Tense?

A. Verbs Inceptives do also want the preter Tense, as. *Ad hac inceptiva*

rasco is | caret | pueraſcere | caret

All Verbs Passives want their preter Tense, when their Actives want the Supines, as *Et passiva quibus*

Metuor, eris vel ere; *pret.* caret, metui, metuen-
from the Active metuo, which wants the Supines.

Timeor, eris, vel ere; *pret.* caret, timeri, timen-
from the Active timeo, which wants the Supines.

3. How comes it to pass, that all Verbs passives want preter Tense, whose Actives want the Supines?

4. Because Verbs passives form (or borrow) their preter Tense from the later Supine, so that if the Supines be wanting, there can be nothing from whence the Verb may form (or borrow) its preter Tense.

2. Do

*Meditativa
omnia.*

2. Do no other Verbs want the preter
A. All Meditatives do want the preterpe
fect Tense, except

present T.	preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
4. parturio	parturivi	parturire	parturitum
4. esurio is	esurivi	esurire	esuritum

Of Verbs that want their Supines.

2. What is the meaning of this Rule, *Hæc raro a
nunquam?*

A. These Verbs following, seldom or never have the
Supines, as,

Con.

Con.			
3. lambo is	lambi	lambere	
1. mico as	micui	micare	
3. rudo is	rudi	rudere	
3. scabo is	scabi	scabere	
3. parco is	peperci	parcere	
3. dispesco is	dispescui	dispescere	
3. posco is	poposci	poscere	
3. disco is	didici	discere	
3. compesco is	compescui	compescere	
3. quinisco is	quexi	quiniscere	
3. dego is	degi	degere	Supinis caret
3. angō is	anxi	angere	
3. fugo is	fuxi	fugere	
3. lingo is	linxi	lingere	
3. ningo is	ninxi	ningere	
3. satago is	fatégi	fatagere	
3. psallo is	psalli	psallere	
volo vis	volui	velle	
nolo nonvis	nolui	nolle	
malo vis	malui	malle	
3. tremo is	tremui	tremere	
2. strideo es	stridui	stridere	

Present Tense	preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	
strido is	stridi	stridere	
flaveo es	flavi	flavere	
liveo es	livi	livere	
paveo es	avi	avere	Supinis caret
paveo es	pavi	pavere	
conniveo is	connivi	connivere	
serveo es	fervi	fervere	

Q. What other Verbs want the Supines?

A. The Compounds of *nuo*, do want the
Supines, as. *à nuo comp.*

renuo is	renui	renuere	caret
----------	-------	---------	-------

Also the Compounds of *cado*, as, *à cado ut
incido*

incido is	incidi	incidere	caret
-----------	--------	----------	-------

Q. Do all the Compounds of *cado*, want the Supines?

A. No, except *occido*, and *recido*, as,

occido dis	occidi	occidere	occasum
recido dis	recidi	recidere	recasum
respuo is	respui	respuere	
luo is	lui	luere	
metuo is	metui	metuere	
cluo is	clui	cluere	Supinis caret.
frigeo es	frixi	frigere	
calvo is	calvi	calvere	
sterto is	stertui	stertere	
timeo es	timui	timere	
luceo es	luxi	lucere	
arceo es	arcai	arcere	

Q. But do the Compounds of *arceo*, want the Supines?

A. No, the Compounds of *arceo*, make *ercitum* in the
Supines, as.

coerceo es	coercui	coercere	coercitum
------------	---------	----------	-----------

So

So the Compounds of *gruo*, as

present Tense.	preterperf.	Inf. Mood.	Supines.
3. ingruo is	ingruui	ingruere	ingruitum

Q. What is the meaning of this Rule, *Et quæcunq*
ui ?

A. Verbs Neuters of the second Conjugation that
ui, in the preter Tense want the Supines ? except the
following, *oleo*, *doleo*, *placeo*, *taceo*, *pareo*, *careo*, *no*
pateo, *lateo*, *valeo*, and *caleo*, which have the Supines

Q. Decline the aforesaid words.

A.

2. oleo es	olui	olere	olitum
2. doleo es	dolui	dolere	dolitum

2. placeo es	{ placui & placitus sum vel fui	} placere	{ placitum
--------------	---------------------------------------	-----------	------------

2. taceo es	tacui	tacere	tacitum
2. pareo es	parui	parere	paritum

2. careo es	{ carui & cassus sum vel fui	} carere	{ cassum & caritum
-------------	------------------------------------	----------	--------------------------

2. noceo es	nocui	nocere	nocitum
-------------	-------	--------	---------

2. pateo es	{ patui & passus sum vel fui	} patere	{ passum
-------------	------------------------------------	----------	----------

2. lateo es	latui	latere	latitum
2. valeo es	valui	valere	valitum
2. caleo is	calui	calere	calitum

Synt

SYNTAXIS Explain'd.

WHAT is *Syntaxis*?

A. It is a due connexion and coherence of the parts of Speech between themselves, according to the Use the most approv'd Authors.

The Verb personal agrees with its Nominative Case in the same Number, and same Person, as *nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*; *est* the Verb personal agrees with the Nominative Case *via*.

The Nominative Case of the first or second Person, is seldom express'd, except it be for distinction or emphasis sake; as *vos damnastis*; *damnastis* is a Verb of the second Person, agrees with its Nominative Case, *vos*, being express'd.

Verbs whose signification belongs to Men, the Nominative Case of the third Person is sometimes understood; as *fertur atrocia flagitio designasse*; *fertur* is a Verb of the third Person, agreeing with its Nominative Case which is understood.

How many ways will a Verb agree with its, (or a) Nominative Case?

Six ways.

Give some Examples.

1. The casual word, as is express'd in the first Rule *um personale*.

Sometimes a Verb of the Infinitive Mood, put instead of the Nominative Case; as, *mentiri non est meum*; *mentiri* is the Infinitive Mood, put instead of the Nominative Case to the Verb, *est*.

Rule 1.
*Verbum
Personale.*

Rule 2.
*Nominativus
primæ vel
secundæ
Personæ.*

Rule 3.
*In verbis
quorum
significa-
tio ad ho-
mines.*

Rule 4.
*Non sem-
per vox
casualis.*

3. Some-

Rule 5. Sometimes an whole Sentence is put instead of the Nominative Case to the Verb; as, *Ingenuas dedicisse fideliter artes emollit* doth agree with the whole Sentence *Ingenuas didicisse fideliter artes*, which is put instead of Nominative Case.

4. Sometimes part of a Sentence is put for the Nominative Case to the Verb; as *Amare mundum præ Deo, turpissimum est*: *Amare mundum* is part of a Sentence put for the Nominative Case to the Verb *est*.

5. Sometimes the word Absolute is put for the Nominative Case to the Verb, as, *fit, est, nota vocandi*: *Est* the Verb agrees with *fit*, which is put for the Nominative Case.

Rule 6. Sometimes an Adverb with a Genitive Case, is put for the Nominative Case to the Verb; as *Partim virorum ceciderunt*: The Verb *cecidit* agrees with *partim virorum*, which is put instead of the Nominative.

Rule 7. Verbs of the Infinitive Mood will have before them an Accusative Case instead of Nominative; as *Te rediisse incolumem gaudere*: *Te* is the Accusative Case, comes before Infinitive Mood *rediisse*.

Rule 8. But this Infinitive Mood may be turned to the Indicative, by adding the Conjunction *quod* or *ut*; as for *Te rediisse incolumem gaudere* we may say, *Quod tu rediisti incolumis gaudere*: *Rediisti* is the Indicative agrees with the Nominative Case *tu*, because *quod* is added.

Rule 9. A Verb placed between two Nominative Cases of diverse Numbers, may agree with either of them, if the Nominative Cases be of the same Person; as *Amantium iræ amoris redeintegratio est*; or you may say, *Amantium iræ amoris redeintegratio sunt*: *Est* is the Verb placed between two Nominative Cases of divers Numbers *iræ* and *redeintegratio*, agrees with the Nominative Case *redeintegratio*; or *sunt*

Verb placed between the two said Nominative Cases, agrees with the Nominative *iræ*.

Verb Impersonal hath no Nominative before it; as, *Tædet me vitæ*: *Tædet* is Verb Impersonal put without a Nominative

Rule 10.
Verbum impersonale.

Noun of multitude of the Singular Number will have a Verb plural to agree with it; as *pars abiære*: *Abiere* is the Verb plural, agree with the Nominative Case *pars*; which, if it be of the Singular Number by Declension yet being a Noun Collective, is the Number by signification.

Rule 11.
Nomen multitudinis.

The Adjective agrees with its Substantive in the same Case, Gender and Number; as *Rara in terris*: *Rara* is the Adjective agrees with the Substantive *avis*.

Rule 12.
Adjectivum cum Substantivo.

Participles and Pronouns do also agree with Substantives in Case, Gender and Number; as *Nullus ad amissas ibit amicus opes*; *Amissas* the Participle agrees with the Substantive &c.

Rule 13.
Adeundem modum participia, &c.

Sometimes a Sentence is put instead of the Substantive, with which the Adjective, &c. agrees, as if it were a Substantive; as, *Audito in Dorobèrniam proficisci*. *Audito* is the Participle agrees with the whole Sentence, *Regem Dorobèrniam profi-*

Rule 14.
Aliquando oratio.

Note, That an Adjective, &c. will have a Substantive in many ways, as a Verb will have a Nominative Case.

The Relative agrees with the Antecedent in Gender, Number, and Person; as *Vir bonus quis; qui, &c. qui*, is the Relative agrees with its Antecedent *Vir*.

Rule 15.
Relativum cum antecedente.

Sometimes an whole Sentence is put instead of the Antecedent; as, *in tempore ad eam veni, omnium rerum est primum; quod* is the Relative agrees with the Sentence *in tempore ad eam veni*.

Rule 16.
Nec unica vox solum

Note

Note, That a Relative will have an Antecedent as ways, as an Adjective will have a Substantive.

Rule 17. A Relative placed between two Antecedents of divers Genders, sometimes agrees with the former ; as *Senatus assiduam stationem præsepebat, qui hodie senaculum appellatur* ; is the Relative placed between two Antecedents, *loci* and *senaculum*, and agrees with the former.

Rule 18. Sometimes a Relative placed between Antecedents of divers Genders, agrees with the later ; as, *homines tuentur illum gladium quæ terra dicitur ; quæ*, is the Relative placed between two Antecedents *globum* and *terra*, and agrees with the later *terra*.

Rule 19. Sometimes a Relative, and sometimes a Noun Adjective hath Relation to the Relative ; which is understood in the possessive ; as *omnes omnia bona dicere, & laudare fortunas meas, & gladium habere*, &c. *qui*, is a Relative hath relation to the Primitive, *mei*, which is understood in the Possessive.

Rule 20. When there comes no Nominative Case between the Relative and the Verb, the Relative shall be the Nominative Case to the Verb ; as *felix qui potuit boni fontem visere lucidum* ; is the Nominative Case comes before the Verb *potuit*.

Rule 21. But if a Nominative Case comes between the Relative and the Verb, the Relative shall be governed of the Verb, or of some word, which is placed in the same Sentence ; as, *gratia ab officio, quod mora tardat, abest ; quod* ; is the Relative is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *tardat*.

Substantivorum constructio.

WHEN two Substantives come together with this sign [*of*] between them, the later of those Substantives shall be put in the Genitive Case; as, *crescit amor nummi*, &c. *nummi* is the Genitive Case, the later of two Substantives, *amor* is the former.

The Genitive Case is oftentimes turn'd into the Adjective Possessive; as, *patris domus*, *interni domus*; *paterna* is the Adjective Possessive agrees with the Substantive *domus*.

Sometimes the Genitive Case is turned into the Dative Case; as, for *urbis pater* we read *urbi pater*; *urbi* is the Dative Case, governed of the Substantive *pater*.

When the Substantives signifie, or belong to the same thing, they shall be put in the Genitive Case by apposition; as, *effodiuntur opera mala, irritamenta* is the Nominative Case Plural, put in apposition with the Substantive *opes*.

An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put absolute, that is, without a Substantive, will be in the Genitive Case; as, *paululum pecunie* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *paululum*.

The Genitive Case is sometimes put alone, the former Substantive being understood by the Ellipsis; as, *ubi ad Dianæ veneris*; *Dianæ* is the Genitive Case alone, the Substantive *templum* being understood.

Praise and dispraise of any thing is used in the Genitive or Ablative Case; as, *ingenui vultus puer*; *fide* in the Ablative Case governed of the Substantive *vultus* is the Genitive Case governed of the Substantive *puer*.

Rule 22.

Quum duo Substantiva.

Rule 23.

Proinde hic Genitivus.

Rule 24.

Est etiam ubi in Dativum.

Rule 25.

Excipiuntur quæ in eodem casu ponuntur.

Rule 26.

Adjectivum in neutro genere.

Rule 27.

Ponitur interdum Genitivus tantum.

Rule 28.

Laus & vituperium.

Opes

Subj

Rule 29.
*Opus &
usus Ablat.*

Opus and *Usus*, when they be Latin for *work* will govern an Ablative Case; as, *authoritua nobis opus est*; *authoritate* is the Ablative governed of the Substantive *opus*.

Rule 30.
*Opus autem Ad-
jectivè.*

When *Opus* is an Adjective, and is Latin for *needful*, it will most commonly govern the Dative Case; as, *dux nobis & autor opus nobis* is the Dative Case governed of the Adjective *opus*.

Finis regularum, quæ ad Substantivorum constructionem pertinent.

Adjectivorum Constructio.

Rule 31.
Adjectiva quæ desiderium.

Adjectives that signify desire, ignorance, knowledge, remembrance, or forgetfulness, and such like will govern a Genitive Case; as, *est natura hominum novitatis avida* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *avida*.

Rule 32.
Adjectiva verbalia in ax.

Adjectives ending in *ax*, derived from Verbs, will govern a Genitive Case; as, *audacis ingenii*; *ingenii* is the Genitive Case, governed of the Adjective *audax*.

Rule 33.
Nomina partitiva

Nouns Partitives, or put partitively with some Interrogatives, and certain Nouns Numbers will govern a Genitive Case, of the Noun from whence they borrow their Genitive Case; as, *utrum horum mavis, accipe*; *horum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *mavis*.

Rule 34.
*In alio tam-
en sensu.*

In another sense, Nouns Partitives, &c. will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as, *primus ab Hercule*; *Hercule* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective *primus*, and the Preposition *ab*.

Rule 35.
*In alio ve-
ro sensu.*

In another sense they will govern a Dative Case; as, *nulli pietate secundus*; *nulli* is the Dative Case, governed of the Adjective *secundus*.

Sometimes they are used with one of these prepositions; *e, de, ex, inter, ante*; as, *est deus è* *is alter, vobis* is the Ablative Case, governed by the Adjective *alter*, and the Preposition *e*.

The Question and the Answer must be made in the same Case and Tense, that the Question is asked by; as, *quarum rerum, nulla est satis? divitiarum*; *quarum* is the Question in the Genitive, and *divitiarum* is the Answer in the same Case.

But when the Question is made by *cujus, ja*, then the Question and the Answer shall be put in divers Cases; as, *cujum pecus? laniorum*; *cujum* is the Question in the Nominative, and *laniorum* is the Answer in the Genitive.

Also when the Verb will govern divers Cases in the Question and the Answer shall be put in divers Cases; as, *furtive accusas, an hominis? utroque; furti* is the Question in the Genitive, and *utroque* is the Answer in the same Case.

The Question and the Answer must also be put in divers Cases, when the Answer is made by any of these Possessives, *meus, tuus, suus*; as, *cujus est hic codex? meus*; *cujus* is the Question in the Genitive, and *meus* is the Answer in the Nominative Case.

Words of the Comparative and the Superlative degree, being but partitively (that is) having this word *of*, or *among*, before them will be in a Genitive Case.

But the Comparative degree is referred but to two, the Superlative to more than two; as, *fortior est dextra; digitorum, medius longissimus*; *manuum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective of the Comparative degree *fortior*, and *digitorum* is the Genitive governed of the Adjective of the Superlative degree *longissimus*.

Rule 36.
Usurpantur autem.

Rule 37.
Interrogativum & ejus reditivum.

Rule 38.
Fallit hæc regula.

Rule 39.
Aut per dictionem variæ Syntaxeos.

Rule 40.
Fallit denique cum per possessiva.

Rule 41.
Comparativa & Superlativa. Comparativum autem ad duo, Superlativum ad plura.

They

Rule 42.
*Accipiuntur autem
partitive.*

Rule 43.
*Comparativa cum
exponuntur per
quam.*

Rule 44.
*Adsciscuntur
et alterum Ablativum.*

Rule 45.
*Tanto,
quanto,
multo, &c.*

Rule 46.
*Adjectiva
quibus
commodum.*

Rule 47.
*Quædam
ex his.*

They are taken partitively, when they are expounded by *e*, *ex*, or *inter*; as, *Virgilii poetarum doctissimus*; *poetarum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *doctissimus*.

Nouns of the Comparative degree having *than* or *by* after them, will cause the word that follows either of them to be put in the Ablative Case; as, *Vilius argentum est auro*; *auro* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective of the Comparative degree *vilius*.

They will also govern an Ablative Case signifying the measure of excess; as, *quantodotior est, tanto te geras submissus*; *quanto* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective of the Comparative degree *dotior*.

Tanto, quanto, multo, longe, ætate, &c. are put to both degrees, that is the Comparative and Superlative; as, *tanto tu pessimus* *nium poëta*; *tanto* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective *pessimus*.

Adjectives that signify Profit or Disprofit, Likeness or Unlikeness, Pleasure or Displeasure, and such like, will govern a Dative Case with the sign, *to* or *for*, after them; as, *bonus, o felixque tuis*; *tuis* is the Dative Case governed of the Adjective *bonus*.

Some Adjectives which signify likeness govern a Dative Case; as, *quem metuis, hujus erat*; *hujus* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *par*.

Communis, alienus, immunitis, do serve divers Cases; as, *commune animantium omnium est*, and *mors omnibus communis*; *animantium* is the Genitive Case, governed of the Adjective *commune*, and *omnibus* is the Dative governed of the Adjective *communis*.

Natus, commodus, incommodus, utilis, will govern an Accusative Case with a preposition; as, *natus ad gloriam*; *gloriam* is the Accusative Case governed of the preposition *ad*, and the Adjective (or rather Participle) *natus*.

Verbs in *bilis* of the Passive significative and Participles in *dus*, will govern an Accusative Case; as, *O mibi post nullos, Juli orande, sodales*; *mibi* is the Dative governed of the Participle *memorande*.

Adjectives that signify the length, breadth, thickness of any thing, will govern an Accusative Case; as, *gnomon septem pedes*; *pedes* is the Accusative Case governed of the Adjective *longus*.

Sometimes the measure, length, breadth, thickness, is put after Adjectives in the Accusative Case; as, *fons latus pedibus tri-*; *pedibus* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective *latus*.

Sometimes the measure, length, breadth, thickness, is put in the Genitive Case; as, *pedum denum latus facito*; *pedum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *latus*.

Rule 48.

Communis, alienus, immunitis.

Rule 49.

Natus, commodus, incommodus.

Rule 50.

Verbalia in bilis.

Rule 51.

Magnitudinis mensura.

Rule 52.

Interdum & in ablativo.

Rule 53.

Interdum & in genitivo.

Rule 54.
*Adjectiva quæ
ad copiam.*

Adjectives that betoken plenty or want will govern an Ablative, or a Genitive Case, of the word that hath, *of*, *in*, *with* before it; as, *amor & melle & felicitas est fecundissimus*; *melle* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective *fecundissimus*.

Rule 55.
Nomina diversitatis.

Nouns of diversity will govern an Ablative Case, with a Preposition of the word that hath *from*, before it; as, *alter ab illo*; *illo* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *ab*, and the Adjective *alter*.

Rule 56.
*Nonnunquam
etiam dative
vum.*

Sometimes Nouns of diversity will govern a Dative Case; as, *huic diversum*; *huic* is the Dative Case governed of the Adjective *diversum*.

Rule 57.
*Adjectiva regunt
Ablativum.*

Adjectives govern an Ablative Case signifying the cause; as, *pallidus iræ*; *iræ* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective *pallidus*.

Rule 58.
*Forma vel
modus.*

The form or manner of a thing, is after Nouns in the Ablative Case; as, *res miris modis pallida*; *modis* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective *pallida*.

Rule 59.
Dignus, indignus.

The Adjectives, *dignus*, *indignus*, *laudatus*, *captus*, *contentus*, and *extorritus*, govern an Ablative Case; as, *dignus odio*, *odio* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective *dignus*.

Rule 60.
Horum nonnulla Genitivo.

But some of these Adjectives will govern a Genitive Case; as, *Militia operis altera digna tui*; *operis* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adjective *digna*.

Pronominum Constructio.

ME I, tui, sui, nostri and vestri, the Genitive Cases of the Primitive, be used when Passion is signified; as — *anguet desiderio tui*: Tui is the Genitive Case governed of the Substantive *desiderio*. When Possession is signified, *meus, tuus, noster* and *vester*, are used; as, *Favet desiderio tuo*: Tuo is the Dative Case agrees with the Substantive *desiderio*.

These Genitive Cases *nostrum* and *vestrum*, be put after Distributives, Participles, Comparatives and Superlatives; as, *unusquisque vestrum, nemo nostrum*: *Vestrum* the Genitive Case governed of the Noun Distributive *unusquisque*.

These Possessives *meus, tuus, suus, noster* and *vester*, do take after them these Genitive Cases, *ipsius, solius, unius, duorum, trium, omnium, plurium, paucorum, cujusque*; the Genitive Cases of the Participles which are referred to the Genitive Case of the Primitive, understood in the Possessive; *Ex tuo ipsius animo conjecturam feceris*: *Tuo* is the Genitive Case governed of the Possessive *tuo*.

The Pronoun *ipse* representeth the signification of the three Persons only; as, *Ipse* the first Person; *ipse videris*, the second Person; *ipse dixit*, the third Person. The Pronoun *ipse* is also joined to Nouns and Pronouns; as, *Ipse ego, ipse ille, ipse talis*.

The Compound *idem* may also be joined to the Persons; as, *Ego idem adsum*: *Idem* *proptias perge facere; idem jungat vulpes*.

Rule 61.
Mei, tui, sui, &c.

Rule 62.
Meus, tuus, suus.

Rule 63.
Nostrum & vestrum Genitivi.

Rule 64.
Hæc possessiva meus, tuus.

Ipse ex Pro-nominibus.

Et nominibus.

Idem, etiam omnibus.

Hæc demonstrativa.

Ille tum.

Iste vero.

Hic & ille.

These Demonstratives, *hic, ille* and *iste* are thus distinguished; *hic*, he, sheweth denoteth him that is next unto me; *iste* he, denoteth him that is by thee; and *ille* sheweth him that is remote from us both.

The Pronoun *ille*, is used when we shew the eminence of any thing; as, *Alexander ille Magnus.*

But *iste* is used when we speak of a thing in Contempt; as, *Istum amicum quoad poteris, ab ea pellito.*

Hic and *ille* when they have relation to two Nouns going before, *hic*, ought to be referred to the later and nearer, *ille* to the former and farther off.

But sometimes the Pronoun *hic* is referred to the Substantive farther off, and *ille* to the nearer.

Verborum Constructio.

Rule 65.
Verba Substantiva.

VERBS Substantives, as *sum, fio, existo*, and Verbs Passive calling; as, *Nominor, dicor, appellor, nuncior*, and such like; as, *Scribor, salutor, doceor, existimor*, and Verbs of Gesture *sedeo, dormio, cubo, incedo, curro*, will take a Nominative Case before them, and a Nominative Case after them; as, *Deus summum bonum: Deus* is the Nominative Case, comes before the Verb *est*, and *Deus* is the Nominative Case follows the Verb *est*.

Rule 66.
Denique omnia fere.

All Verbs will have a Nominative Case after them of the Noun Adjective which agrees with the Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number; *Rex mandavit perit extirpari hæresin. Primus* is the Nominative Case follows the Verbs *mandavit, perit*, agrees with the Substantive *Rex*.

Verbs of the Infinitive Mood will have these Cases after them as they have before them, especially Verbs of wishing, and of the like; as, *Hypocrita cupit videri justus*, *Hypocrita cupit se videri justum*: Justus the Nominative Case follows the Verb of the Infinitive Mood *videri*, and agrees with the Substantive *hypocrita*.

In these last Examples, the Accusative Case is understood before a Verb of the Infinitive Mood; as, *Nos esse desertos*: *Nos* is the Accusative Case comes before the Infinitive Mood *esse*.

The Verb *sum* will govern a Genitive Case, when it signifies possession, or belongs to any thing; as, *Pecus est Melibæi*: *Melibæi* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *est*.

These Nominative Cases, *meum*, *tuum*, *nostrum*, *vestrum*, *humanum*, *bellui*, &c. are excepted; as, *Non est meum auctoritatem senatus dicere*: *Meum* the Nominative Case governed of the Verb *est*.

But the word *Officium*, Duty, seems to be understood, which sometimes is expressed as in this Rule; *Tuum est officium bas ut adsimules nuptias*: *Officium* is the Nominative Case governed of the Verb *est*. Verbs of esteeming will govern a Genitive Case; as, *Plurimi passim fit pecunia*: *Plurimi* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *fit*.

The Verb *æstimo* will govern a Genitive or Ablative Case; as, *Non hujus te æstimo*: *Hujus* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *æstimo*.

Rule 67.
Infinitum quoque utrinque Nominat.

Rule 68.
Quamvis in his, &c.

Rule 69.
Sum Genitivum postulat.

Rule 70.
Excipiuntur hi Nominat.

Rule 71.
At hic subintelligi.

Rule 72.
Verba æstimandi.

Rule 73.
Æstimo vel Gen. vel Abl.

Rule 74.
*Flocci, nauci,
nibili.*

Rule 75.
*Singularia
sunt ista.*

Rule 76.
*Verba accu-
sandi.*

Rule 77.
*Vertitur hic
Genitivus.*

Rule 78.
*Uterque,
nullus,
neuter.*

Rule 79.
*Satago,
miseror.*

Rule 80.
*At miseror
& miseresco.*

Rule 81.
*Reminiscor,
obliviscor.*

These Genitive Cases, *Flocci, nauci, nibili, pili, assis, hujus, teruncii*, are put after the Verbs, *estimo, pendo, facio*, most properly as *ego illum flocci pendo*; *flocci* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *pendo*.

These are singular Phrases; *æqui boni consulo, æqui boni facio*; *æqui* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *consulo*.

Verbs of accusing, condemning, warning, or absolving, will govern a Genitive Case of the Crime; as, *Qui alterum incusat probri*; *probri* is the Genitive Case Governed of the Verb *incusat*.

This Genitive Case is sometimes turned into an Ablative with a Preposition, without a Preposition; as, *condemnabam te crimine*; *crimine* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *condemnabo*.

Uterque, nullus, neuter, &c. and Nouns of the Superlative degree are not put with Verbs of accusing, but in the Ablative Case; as, *accusas furti, an stupri, an utriusque?* *utroque* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *accusas*.

Satago, misereor, miseresco, will govern a Genitive Case; as, *is rerum suarum satagit*; *rerum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *satagit*.

But *miseror* and *miseresco* are sometimes (tho' but seldom) read with a Dative Case; as, *huic misereor, huic succurro*; *huic* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *miseror*.

Reminiscor, obliviscor, and memini, govern a Genitive or an Accusative Case; as, *datæ fidei reminiscitur*; *fidei* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *reminiscitur*; and *omnia, quæ curant, senes meminerunt*; *omnia* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *meminerunt*.

The Verb *potior* will govern a Genitive Case or an Ablative; as, *Romani signorum armorum potiti sunt*; *signorum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *potiti*.

All Verbs that are put acquisitively, that is to say, have the sign *to* or *for* after them, will govern a Dative Case; as, *istic mihi scribitur nec metitur*; *mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *scribitur*.

Verbs that signify profit or disprofit will govern a Dative Case; as, *illa seges, de votis respondet avari agricolæ*; *votis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *respondet*.

Some Verbs of profit or disprofit will govern an Accusative Case; as *unum student omnes, unum sentitis*; *unum* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *sentitis*.

Verbs of comparing will govern a Dative Case; as, *parvis componere magna sonantia*; *parvis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *componere*.

Sometimes Verbs of comparing will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as, *comparo Virgilium cum Homero*; *Homero* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *comparo*, and the Preposition *cum*.

Sometimes Verbs of comparing will govern an Accusative Case with a Preposition; as, *si ad eum comparatur, nihil est*; *eum* is the Accusative Case governed of the Preposition *ad* and the Verb *comparatur*.

Verbs of giving and restoring will govern a Dative Case; as, *fortuna multis unum dedit, nulli satis*; *multis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *dedit*.

Rule 82.
Potior aut Genitivo, aut Ablativo.

Rule 83.
Omnia verba acquisitive.

Rule 84.
Imprimis verba significantia commodum.

Rule 85.
Ex his quædam efferuntur.

Rule 86.
Verba comparandi.

Rule 87.
Interdum additur Ablativus.

Rule 88.
Aliquando Accusativus.

Rule 89.
Verba dandi & reddendi.

Rule 90.
*Hæc variam
habent.*

These Verbs, *dono*, *impertio*, and *pergo*, &c. will govern divers Cases; *dono tibi hoc munus*; and *dono te hoc munus tibi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *dono*, and *te* (in the second Example) is governed of the Verb *dono*.

Impertio.

Huic rei aliquid temporis impertias; is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *impertias*.

Aspergo.

Asperfit mihi labem, or *asperfit me labem mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *asperfit*, and *me* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *asperfit*.

Consulo.

When *consulo* is Latin to give counsel it will govern a Dative Case; as, *piget fido consuluisse viro*; that is, *dedisse consilium viro* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *consuluisse*.

But when *consulo* is Latin for to counsel, it will govern an Accusative Case; as, *rectorem ratis de astris consulit*; *rectorem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *consulit*.

Metuo, &c.

Metuo, *timeo*, *formido*, when they signify a careful fear, will govern a Dative Case, or an Ablative with a Preposition; as, *metuo tibi*, *vel de te* that is, *sum sollicitus pro te*; *tibi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *metuo*; and *te* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *metuo*, *meo*, or *formido*.

But *metuo*, *timeo*, and *formido*, when they signify an hateful fear, will govern an Accusative Case, or else an Ablative with the Preposition *a*; as, *metuo, timeo, formido, te vel à te*, that is, *ne mihi noceas*; *te* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *metuo*, and *te* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *à*, and the Verb *metuo*.

Verbs of promising or paying will govern a Dative Case; as, *hac tibi promitto*; *tibi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *promitto*.

Verbs of commanding or shewing will govern a Dative Case; as, *imperat aut ser-
at collecta pecunia cuique*; *cuique* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *imperat*.

Tempero, and *refero*, *scribo*, and *mitto*, all govern divers Cases; as, *tempero, moderor tibi & te*; *tibi* is the Dative, and *te* is the Accusative governed of the Verb *tempero*; *refero tibi & ad te*; *tibi* is the Dative Case, governed of the Verb *refero*, and *te* is the Accusative Case governed of the Preposition *ad*, and the Verb *refero*.

Verbs of trusting will govern a Dative Case; as, *vacuis committere venis*; *venis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *committere*.

Verbs of obeying or resisting will govern a Dative Case; as, *semper obtemperat filius patri*; *patri* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *obtemperat*.

But some of these Verbs will govern other Cases; as, *ad amorem nihil potuit accedere*; *amorem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *accedere*, and the Preposition *ad*.

Ausculdo, when it is Latin for to obey, govern a Dative Case; as, *ausculdo tibi*; *tibi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *ausculdo*.

But when *ausculdo* is Latin for to hear, it govern an Accusative Case; as, *ausculdo te*; *te* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *ausculdo*.

Rule 91.
Verba promittendi.

Rule 92.
Verba imperandi.

*Dicimus
Tempero.*

Rule 93.
Verba fidendi.

Rule 94.
Verba obsequendi, &c.

Rule 95.
At ex his quædam.

Rule 96.
Verba minandi.

Rule 97.
Sum cum compositis.

Rule 98.
*Dativum pos-
tulant verba
composita.*

Rule 99.
*Pauca ex his
mutant Dat.*

Rule 100.
*Est pro habeo
Dativum.*

Rule 101.
*Huic confine
est suppetit.*

Rule 102.
*Sum cum mul-
tis aliis.*

Rule 103.
*Est ubi hic
Dativus tibi
aut sibi.*

Verbs of threatenng or being angry with will govern a Dative Case; as, *utrique mortem minatus est*; *utrique* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *minatus est*.

The Verb *sum*, with its compounds, except *possum*, will govern a Dative Case; as, *rex pius est reipublicæ ornamento*; *reipublicæ* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *est*.

Verbs that are compounded with any of these Prepositions, *præ, ad, con, sub, ante, post, ob, in, inter*, or Verbs compounded with either of these Adverbs, *satis, bene, male*, will govern a Dative Case; as, *meis majoribus virtute præluxi*; *majoribus* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *præluxi*.

Some of these Verbs compounds will govern another Case; as, *præstat ingenio*; *ingenio* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *præstat*.

When the Verbs *est* is put for *habeo*, will govern a Dative Case; as, *velle scilicet cuique est, nec voto vivitur uno*; *cuique* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *est*.

When the Verb *suppetit* is put for *habeo* it will govern a Dative Case; as, *pauper enim non est, cui rerum suppetit usus*; *cui* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *suppetit*.

The Verb *sum*, with many others, will govern two Dative Cases; as, *exitio avidis mare nautis*; *exitio* and *nautis* be two Dative Cases governed of the Verb *sum*.

There is a time when the Dative Cases *tibi, sibi, or mihi*, are added for no necessity sake, but rather for pleasure; as, *tibi hoc effectum dabo*; *tibi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *dabo*.

Accusative

Accusativus post Verbum.

VERBS Transitives of what kind soever they be, whether they be Active, Commune, or Deponent, will have an Accusative Case after them; as, *percontatorem fugito, nam garrulus idem est*; *percontatorem* is the Accusative Case follows the Verb *fugito*.

Moreover, Verbs Intransitives and Neuters, will govern an Accusative Case; as, *antiquam aetatem hominum vivebat Nestor*; *aetatem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *vivebat*.

Authors sometimes change the Accusative Case into an Ablative; as, *diu videor vitam vivere*; *vita* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *vivere*.

Some Verbs do govern an Accusative Case by a Figure; as, *nec vox hominem sonat*; *hominem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *sonat*.

Verbs of asking, teaching, and arraying, will govern two Accusative Cases, the one of the Person, and the other of the Thing; as, *tu modo posce Deum veniam*; *Deum* and *veniam* are the two Accusative Cases governed of the Verb *posce*, *Deum* of the Person, and *veniam* of the Thing.

Verbs of asking sometimes change one of the Accusative Cases into an Ablative; as, *veniam oremus ab ipso*; *ipso* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *oremus*, and the Preposition *ab*.

Verbs of arraying sometimes do change one of the Accusative Cases into an Ablative or Dative; as, *induo te tunicâ vel tibi tunicam*; *tunicâ* is the Ablative Case, governed of the Verb *induo*; and *tibi* is the Dative Case governed of the same Verb.

Rule 104.
Verba transitive.

Rule 105.
Quinetiam verba quamlibet.

Rule 106.
Hunc Accusativum mutant Authores.

Rule 107.
Sunt quæ figurate Accusabent.

Rule 108.
Verba rogandi, docendi, &c.

Rule 109.
Rogandi verba interdum mutant.

Rule 110.
Vestiendi verba interdum mutant, &c.

Ablativus post Verbum.

Rule 111.
*Quodvis ver-
bum admittit
Ablativum,
&c.*

Rule 112.
*Ablativo cau-
sæ & modi
actionis.*

Rule 113.
*Quibuscumque
verbis subji-
ciuntur nomina pre-
teriti in Ablat.*

Rule 114.
*Vili, paulo,
minimo, mag-
no, nimio,
plurimo.*

Rule 115.
*Excipiuntur
hi Genitivi
sine Substan-
tives.*

Rule 116.
*Valeo etiam
interdum cum
Accusativo.*

ALL Verbs will govern an Ablative Case of the Instrument, of the Cause or of the Manner of doing; as, *demonstravit non armis, sed morte subegit Iesus*; *armis* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *subegit*.

Sometimes a Preposition is added to the Ablative Case signifying the cause or the manner of doing; as, *baccharis præ ebrietate*; *ebrietate* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *præ*, and the Verb *baccharis*.

The Word of Price is put after Verbs in the Ablative Case; as, *teruncio, vitiosa nuce non emerim*; *nuce* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *emerim*.

These Ablative Cases, *vili, paulo, minimo, magno, nimio, plurimo*, are put after Verbs of Price, sometimes without Substantives; as, *redime te captivum quam queas minimo*; *minimo* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *redime*.

But these Genitive Cases, *tanti, quantum, pluris, minoris, tantidem, quantivis, quantumlibet, quancumque*, are put after Verbs of Price without Substantives; as, *tantum eris aliis*; *tanti* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *eris*.

The Verb *valeo* will sometimes govern an Accusative Case; as, *denarii dicti, denos æris valebant*; *denos* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *valebant*.

Verbs of abounding, filling, emptying, discharging, or unloading, will govern an Ablative Case; as, *amore abundas* Antiphras; *amore* is the Ablative Case governed by the Verb *abundas*.

Sometimes Verbs of abounding will govern a Genitive Case; as, *quam dives nimirum pecoris? quam lactis abundans? lactis* the Genitive Case governed by the Participle *abundans*.

These Verbs, *fungor, fruor, utor*, and the like, will govern an Ablative Case; as, *Iustitiæ fungantur officiis; officiis* is the Ablative Case governed by the Verb *fungantur*.

The Verb *prosequor* will govern an Ablative Case; as, *prosequor te amore; amore* the Ablative Case governed by the Verb *prosequor*.

The Verb *afficio* will govern an Ablative Case; as, *afficio te gaudio; gaudio* the Ablative Case governed by the Verb *afficio*.

The Verb *mereor*, with these Adverbs, *malè, meliùs, pejùs, optimè, pessimè*, will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as, *de me nunquam benè meritus* the Ablative Case governed by the Preposition *de*, and the Verb *mereor*.

Verbs of receiving, or being distant or going away, will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as, *istuc ex multo jam pridem audiveram; multis* is the Ablative Case governed by the Preposition *ex*, and the Verb *audiveram*.

Rule 117.
Verba abundandi, implendi, onerandi.

Rule 118.
Ex quibus quadam nonnunquam in Genitivo.

Rule 119.
Fungo, fruor, utro & similia.

Rule 120.
Prosequor te amore, laude, honore.

Rule 121.
Afficio te gaudio, supplicio, dolore.

Rule 122.
Mereor cum Adverbiis benè, malè, meliùs, pejùs, optimè, pessimè.

Rule 123.
Quadam accipiendi, distandi, & auferendi.

Rule 124.
*Vertitur hic
Ablativus.*

Rule 125.
*Verbis quæ
vim compara-
tionis obtinent.*

Rule 126.
*Quibuslibet
additur Abla-
tivus absolute.*

Rule 127.
*Verbis qui-
busdam addi-
tur auferendi
casus per Sy-
necdochē.*

Rule 128.
*Quædam ta-
men effrun-
tur.*

Rule 129.
*Eidem verbo
diversi casus
diversæ rati-
onis apponi
possunt.*

Sometimes the Ablative Case is turned into a Dative; as, *vivere si recte nescis discere peritis*; *peritis* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *discere*.

An Ablative Case signifying the measure of Excess, is put to Verbs which have the force of Comparison; as, *forme existimabat, quos dignitate præferret, ab iis virtutibus superari*; *dignitas* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *præferret*.

An Ablative Case is put absolute after any Verbs; as, *imperante Augusto natus est Christus*; *Augusto* is the Ablative Case put absolute after the Verb *natus est*.

Some Verbs will govern an Ablative Case by the Figure Synecdoche, and an Accusative Case after the manner of Personification; as, *ægotat animo magis quam corpore*; *animo* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *ægotat*; and *candet dentes* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *candet*.

But sometimes they are used in the Genitive Case; as, *absurde facis qui te angustat animi*; *animi* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *angustat*.

Divers Cases of divers Reasons, may be put to the same Verb; as, *dedit mihi vestem pignori, te præsentem, propriam*; *vestem* is the Accusative Case, which follows the Verb *dedit*, by *Verba transitive*; *mibi* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *dedit*, by *Verba dandi reddendi*; *pignori* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *dedit*, by *summi*; *multis aliis*; *te* is the Ablative Case put absolute after the Verb *dedit*;

is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *dedit*, by *Quodvis Verbum adit Ablativum*.

A Verb Passive will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition, and sometimes a Dative of the Doer; as, *laudatur ab his*; *his* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *laudatur*, and the preposition *ab*.

But Participles which are derived from Verbs Passives, will most commonly govern a Dative Case; as, *nulla tuarum, data mihi, nec visa, sororum, mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Participle *audita*.

Some Verbs Passives will govern such Cases as their Actives will govern; as, *exaris à me furti*; *furti* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *accusatus*.

Vapulo, veneo, liceo, exulo, and fio, being Verbs Neuters Passives, will have the Passive Construction; that is, an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as, *à præceptore vapulabis*; *præceptore* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *vapula*, and the Preposition.

Verbs of the Infinitive Mood are usually placed after Verbs, Adjectives, and Participles; as, *juvat usque morari*; *morari* is the Infinitive Mood, the latter of two Verbs, *juvat* is the former.

Verbs of the Infinitive Mood are sometimes put absolutely and by a Figure; as, *eccine fieri flagitia*; *Fieri* is the Infinitive Mood put absolutely.

Rule 130.
Passivis additur Ablativus agentis.

Rule 131.
Quorum Participia frequentius, Dativis gaudent.

Rule 132.
Ceteri casus manent in Passivis.

Rule 133.
Vapulo, veneo, liceo, exulo, fio, neutro passiva.

Rule 134.
Quibusdam tum verbis tum Adjectivis.

Rule 135.
Ponuntur interdum figurate.

De Gerundiis.

Rule 136.
*Gerundia five
gerundivæ vo-
ces & Supina.*

GERUNDS, and Words like Gerunds and Supines, will govern the same Cases as the Verbs will govern, from whence they are derived; as, *Effudit studio videndi parentes: parentes* is in the Accusative Case governed of the Gerund *in di videndi*.

Rule 137.
*Gerundia in
di.*

Gerunds in *di* depend sometimes upon Substantives, and sometimes upon Prepositives; as, *Et quæ tanta fuit Romæ tibi causa videndi: videndi* is the Gerund in *di*, governed of the Substantive *causa*.

Rule 138.
*Poetice infinitivus
modus.*

An Infinitive Mood, after the manner of Poets, is put instead of a Gerund; as, *Stadium quibus arva tueri: tueri* is the Infinitive Mood put instead of a Gerund, and governed of the Substantive *studium*.

Rule 139.
*Interdum non
invenuste.*

Sometimes the Genitive Case Plural is elegantly governed of a Gerund; as, *Quæ illorum videndi gratiâ, me in forum contulifsem: illorum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Gerund *videndi*.

Rule 140.
*Gerundia in
do pendent ab
his Præpositi-
onibus.*

Gerunds in *do* depend on some of the Prepositions, *a, ab, abs, de, e, ex, cum, in, pro*; as, *Ignavi à discendo, cito deceduntur: discendo* is the Gerund in *do*, governed of the Preposition *a*.

sometimes Gerunds in *do* are put with a Preposition; as, *Alitur vitium, atque tegendo*: *tegendo* is a Gerund in put without a Preposition.

Gerunds in *dum* depend upon one of the Prepositions, *inter, ante, ad, ob, super*; as, *Inter cœnandam, hilares esse: cœnandum* is the Gerund in *dum*, governed of the Preposition *inter*.

When necessity is signified, the Gerund *um*, is put absolutely without a Preposition; as, *Orandum est, ut sit mens sana in corpore sano*: *orandum* is the Gerund in put without a Preposition.

Gerunds are sometimes turned into Adjectives; as, *Tantus amor flo- & generandi gloria mellis*: *Generandi* the Gerund turned into a Noun Adjective, and agrees with the Substantive *mellis*.

De Supinis.

THE first Supine signifies actively, that is, betokens to do, and is set to Verbs and Participles, that betoken going to a place; as, *Spectatum veniunt*: *atum* is the first Supine governed of the Verb *veniunt*.

At this Supine in Verbs Neuters Past, and with the Infinitive Mood *iri*, the Passive signification; as, *Coctum non vapulatum dudum conductus sum*: *atum* is the first Supine from the Verb Passive *vapulo*, governed of the Verb *conductus sum*.

Rule 141.
Ponuntur & absque Præpositione.

Rule 142.
Gerundia in dum pendent.

Rule 143.
Cum significatur necessitas.

Rule 144.
Vertuntur Gerundii voces in Nom. Adject.

Rule 145.
Prius Supinum active significat.

Rule 146.
At hoc Supinum.

Rule 147.
Ponitur & absolute cum verbo est.

Rule 148.
Posterius Supinum passive.

The first Supine is sometimes put absolute with the Verb *est*; as, *Actum illicet periisti*: *Actum* is the first Supine put absolute with the Verb *est*.

The later Supine hath the Passive signification, and is put after the Nounsjectives; as, *Non est facile purgatum*: *gatum* is the later Supine governed of Adjective *facile*.

De Tempore.

Rule 149.
Quæ significant partem temporis.

Rule 150.
Quæ autem durationem, &c.

NOUNS that signify part of time commonly put in the Ablative; seldom in the Accusative; as, *Nemo talium omnibus horis sapit*: *horis* is Ablative Case governed of the Verb.

But Nouns that signify continuance of time, be commonly put in the Accusative Case, seldom in the Ablative; as, *Haec ter centum totos regnabitur annos*: *annos* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *regnabitur*.

Spatium Locī.

Rule 151.
Spatium loci in Accusativo.

THE space of a place is put in the Accusative Case; sometimes in the Ablative; as, *Dicitur in terris tres pateat cæli spatium amplius, ulnas*: *ulnas* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb *pateat*.

Appellatur

Appellativa Locorum

THE common names of places are used with a Preposition; and names of Places are sometimes used with a Preposition to Verbs, signifying the motion in a place, to a place, from a place, by a place; as, *In foro versatur*; *meruit regere in Gallia*: *foro* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *in*, and the Verb *meruit*.

Every Verb will govern a Genitive Case the proper name of a place where an action is done; so that the proper name of the first or second Declension and the Singular Number; as, *Quid Romæ faciam*: *Romæ* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *faciam*.

These Genitive Cases, *humī, domī, milībellī*, follow the form of proper names in construction; as, *Domī bellicę simul vivimus*: *domī* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb *vivimus*.

The word *domī*, will have no other Genitive Cases to agree with it, except *meę, suę, nostrę, vestrę, alienę*; as, *Vescor meę non alienę*: *meę* is the Genitive Case agrees with the Substantive *domī*.

If the proper name of the place be of the third Declension or the Plural Number then it shall be put in the Dative or Ablative Case; as, *Colebus an Assyrius*, *Dicis nutritus*: *Thębis* is the Dative or Ablative Case governed of the Participle *nutritus*.

We use *rurī* or *rurē* in the Dative or Ablative Case; as, *Rurī fere se continet*: *rurī* is the Dative Case governed of the Verb *continet*.

Rule 152.
Nomina Appellativa, &c.

Rule 153.
Omne verbum admittit Genitivum.

Rule 154.
Hic Genitivi humī, domī, &c.

Rule 155.
Domī, non alios secum patitur Genitivos.

Rule 156.
Verum si proprium nomen loci.

Rule 157.
Sic utimur rurī vel rurē.

The

Rule 158.
*Verbis significan-
tibus motum ad locum.*

Rule 159.
Ad hunc modum utimur.

Rule 160.
*Verbis significan-
tibus motum à loco aut
per locum.*

Rule 161.
*Ad eundem modum usur-
pantur domus
& rus.*

The proper name of a place is put
Verbs signifying a motion to a place
the Accusative Case; as, *Concessi Can-
brigiam: Cantabrigiam* is the Accusa-
tive Case governed of the Verb *concessi*.

After this manner we use *rus* and *domus*
as, *Ego rus ibo: rus* is the Accusa-
tive Case governed of the Verb *ibo*.

The proper name of a place is put
Verbs signifying a motion from a place
by a place in the Ablative Case; as,
ante Româ profectus esses: Româ is the
Ablative Case governed of the Verb *profectus
esses*.

After the same manner we use *domus*
and *rus*; as, *Nuper exiit domo: domus*
the Ablative Case governed of the Verb
exiit.

Impersonalium Constructio.

Rule 162.
*Hæc tria im-
personalia in-
terest, refert,
& est.*

Rule 163.
*Adjiciuntur
illi Genitivi.*

THESE three Impersonals, *inter-
est*, and *est* for *interest*, will
govern a Genitive Case of all casual words
(except *meâ, tuâ, suâ, nostrâ*, and *vestra*)
the Ablative Cases of the Pronouns
(possessives) as, *Interest magistratus tueri
nos: Magistratus* is the Genitive Case
governed of the Verb Impersonal *interest*.

These Genitive Cases, *tanti, quædam
magni, parvi, &c.* are added to these
impersonals, *interest, refert*, and *est*;
Magni, refert quibuscum vixeris: magni
the Genitive Case governed of the Verb
Impersonal *refert*.

These Impersonals, *accidit, certum, est, ingit, constat, confert, &c.* will govern an Ablative Case; as, *convenit mihi tecum*: is the Dative Case governed of the Verb Impersonal *convenit*.

These Impersonals, *juvat, decet*, with Compounds, *delectat, oportet*, will govern an Ablative Case; as, *Me juvat per altum: me* is the Accusative Case governed of the Verb Impersonal *juvat*.

These Impersonals, *attinet, pertinet, spectat*, will govern an Accusative Case with Preposition *ad*; as, *Mene vis discere, ad te attinet: te* is the Accusative governed of the Preposition *ad*, and Verb Impersonal *attinet*.

These Impersonals, *pœnitent, tædet, misereſcit, pudet, and piget*, will govern an Accusative Case with a Genitive; as, *Si ad centesimum vixisset annum; senectutis eum suæ non pœniteret: eum* is the Accusative and *senectutis* is the Genitive Case governed of the Verb Impersonal *pœniteret*.

Some Verbs Impersonals are turned into Verbs Personals; as, *Non omnes arbuſta juvant* is turned into a Verb Personal, and agrees with the Nominative *arbuſta*.

These Verbs *cœpit, incipit, desinit, deſolet, and poteſt*, being joined to Verbs Impersonals, are put impersonally, that is, without a Nominative Case; as, *Ubi cœperat non convenire: cœperat* being joined to the Impersonal *convenire*, is put impersonally.

Rule 164.
In dativum feruntur hæc impersonalia.

Rule 165.
Hæc impersonalia accusandi casum exigunt.

Rule 166.
His vero attinet, pertinet, spectat.

Rule 167.
His impersonalibus subicitur Accusativus cum Genitivo.

Rule 168.
Nonnulla impersonalia remigrant.

Rule 169.
Cœpit, incipit, desinit, debet, solet, & poteſt.

Rule 170.
*Verbum im-
personale pas-
sivæ vocis.*

Rule 171.
*Qui quidem
casus inter-
dum non ex-
primitur.*

Rule 172.
*Verbum im-
personale pas-
sivæ vocis.*

A Verb Impersonal of the Passive Voice will govern an Ablative Case with a Preposition; as, *Ab hostibus constanter pugnatur*: *hostibus* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *ab*, and the Verb Impersonal *pugnatur*.

Sometimes the Case which is governed of the Verb Impersonal, is not expressed but understood; as, *Strato discumbitur*: The Preposition *ab*, and the Ablative Case *illis*, being understood.

A Verb Impersonal of the Passive Voice may be put for each Person of both Numbers, by the force of an Ablative Case with a Preposition joined to it; as, *Statueretur à me*, is put for the first Person Singular *statui*; and *statueretur ab illis* is put for the third Person Plural *stant*.

Participii Constructio.

Rule 173.
Participia regunt casus verborum.

Rule 174.
*Quamvis in his usitatio-
est Dat.*

Rule 175.
*Participiorum
voces cum sunt
nomina.*

Participles will govern such Cases as the Verbs will govern from which they are derived; as, *Duplices tendunt se consideranda palmas*: *palmas* is the Accusative Case governed of the Participle *tendunt*.

But Participles in *dus* do most commonly govern a Dative Case; as, *Chremes, qui mihi exorandus est*: *mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Participle *exorandus* in *dus*, *exorandus*.

Participles when they be changed into Nouns, do govern a Genitive Case; as, *Alieni appetens, sui profusus*: *alieni* is the Genitive Case governed of the Noun *appetens*.

These Participles, *exosus*, *perosus*, *per-*
osus, will govern an Accusative Case,
 when they have the Active signification ;
mundam segnitiam perosæ ; segnitiam
 the Accusative Case governed of the
 Participle, or rather Adjective *perosæ*.

exosus and *perosus* will govern a Dative
 when they have the Passive signifi-
 cation ; as, *Germani Romanis perosi sunt ;*
Germanis is the Dative Case governed of
 the Participle *perosi*.

These Participles *natus*, *prognatus*, *sa-*
cretus, *creatus*, *ortus*, *editus*, will go-
 vern an Ablative Case ; as, *bona, bonis*
parentibus ; parentibus is the
 Ablative Case governed of the Participle
natus.

Rule 176.
Exosus, peros-
sus, pertasus.

Rule 177.
Exosus & pe-
rosus.

Rule 178.
Natus, prognä-
tus, satus, &c.

Adverbii Constructio.

En and *ecce*, Adverbs of shewing will
 govern a Nominative Case ; as, *En*
Priamus ; Priamus is the Nominative Case
 governed of the Adverb *en*.

En and *ecce*, when they are Adverbs of
 shewing, will govern an Accusative Case
 as, *En animum & mentem ; animum*
 the Accusative Case governed of the
 Adverb *en*.

Adverbs of Place, Time, and Quantity,
 govern a Genitive Case.

Adverbs of Place will govern a
 Genitive Case ; as, *ubi gentium ? quo ter-*
ra abiit ? gentium is the Genitive Case
 governed of the Adverb *ubi*.

Rule 179.
En & ecce de-
monstrandi
adverbia.

Rule 180.
En & ecce ex-
probrantis.

Rule 181:
Quadam ad-
verbia loci,
temporis &
quantitatis.

Adverbs

Rule 182.
*Temporis, ut
nunc, tunc,
tum.*

Adverbs of time will govern a Genitive Case; as, *nihil tunc temporis amplius quam flere poteram*; *temporis* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adverb *tunc*.

Rule 183.
*Quantitatis,
ut parum.*

Adverbs of quantity will govern a Genitive Case; as, *satis eloquentiæ, sapiens parum*; *eloquentiæ* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adverb *satis*.

Rule 184.
*Instar, æquiperationem,
mensuram.*

The Adverb *instar*, when it signifies equality, or matching, measure, or likeness, will govern a Genitive Case; *instar montis equum, divinâ Palladis ædificant*; *montis* is the Genitive Case governed of the Adverb *instar*.

Rule 185.
*Hic apponitur
interdum
prep. ad.*

Sometimes the Preposition *ad*, is added to the Adverb *instar*, and governs a Genitive Case; as, *vallis ad instar castrorum clauditur*; *castrorum* is the Genitive Case governed of the Preposition *ad*, with the Adverb *instar*.

Rule 186.
*Quædam dative
admittunt nomi-
num.*

Some Adverbs will govern a Dative Case, of the Nouns from whence they are derived; as, *venit obviam illi*; *illi* is the Dative Case governed of the Adverb *obviam*.

Rule 187.
*Sunt & hi dative
abverbiales.*

These Dative Cases, *tempori, luci, tempori, quod omnium rerum est primum*; *tempori* is the Dative Case put adverbially after the Verb *veni*.

Rule 188.
*Sunt quæ accusandi casum
admittunt.*

Some Adverbs do govern an Accusative Case, of the Prepositions from whence they are derived; as *Castra propius armoventur*; *urbem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Adverb *propius*.

The Adverb *cedo*, of one earnestly desiring, will govern an Accusative Case; *cedo quemvis arbitrum*; *arbitrum* is the Accusative Case governed of the Adverb *cedo*.

Rule 189.
Cedo, flagitantis.

Adverbs of diversity; as, *aliter, secus*; and these two, *ante, post*, will govern an Ablative Case; as, *multo aliter, paulo feterius*; *multo* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adverb *aliter*.

Rule 190.
Adverbia diversitatis aliter, secus, &c.

Adverbs of the Comparative and Superlative degree, will govern such Cases, as nouns of the Comparative and the Superlative degree will govern; as, *accessit propius illo*; *optime omnium dixit*; *illo* is the Ablative Case governed of the Adjective of the Comparative degree *propius*.

Rule 191.
Adverbia comparativi & superlativi gradus.

The Adverb *plus* will govern a Nominative, a Genitive, an Accusative, and an Ablative Case; as, *paulo plus trecenta vehicula sunt amissa*; *vehicula* is the Nominative Case governed of the Adverb *plus*.

Rule 192.
Plus. Nom. Gen. Acc. & Ablativo.

Conjunctionum Constructio.

Conjunctions, Copulatives and Disjunctives, with these four, *quam, nisi, uterque, an*, couple like Cases together; as, *Socrates docuit Xenophontem & Platonem*; & is a Conjunction couples Cases between *Xenophontem* and *Platonem*.

Rule 193.
Conjunctiones copulativa & disjunctiva.

Rule 194.
Excepto, si
casualis dictio-
nis.

Sometimes Conjunctions do couple divers Cases, because the Verb in the first sentence will govern divers Cases ; as, *librum centussi & pluris* ; & couples divers Cases between *centussi* and *pluris*, because the Verb *emi* will govern divers Cases.

Rule 195.
Conjunctiones
copulativæ,
&c.

Conjunctions, Copulatives and Disjunctives, couple like Moods and Tenses together ; as, *recto stat corpore, despicit terras* ; *que* is a Conjunction couples like Moods and Tenses, between the Verb *stat* and *despicit*.

Rule 196.
Aliquoties au-
tem, &c.

Sometimes Conjunctions do couple divers Tenses, though like Moods ; as, *me lactasses amantem, & vana spe produceres* ; & is a Conjunction couples like Moods, but divers Tenses between the Verbs *lactasses* and *produceres*.

Præpositionum Constructio.

Rule 197.
Præpositio
subaudita.

THE Preposition *in*, when it is understood, sometimes governs the Ablative Case ; as, *babeo te loco parentum* ; *loco* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *in*, which is understood.

Rule 198.
Præpositio in
compositione.

A Preposition in Composition sometimes governs the same Case, that it doth without Composition ; as, *nec posse Italiam Teucrorum avertere regem* ; *Italiâ* is the Ablative Case governed of the Verb *avertere*.

Rule 199.
Verba Compo-
sita cum a ab
ad con, &c.

Verbs compounded with any of the Preposition, *a, ab, ad, con, de, e, ex*, sometimes repeat the same Preposition with their Case ; as, *abstinuerunt à*

is the Ablative Case governed of the verb *abstinuerunt*, and the Preposition *a*. When the Preposition *in*, is set for *erga*, *contra*, or *ad*, it will govern an Accusative Case; as, *accipit in Teucros animum intemque benignam*; *Teucros* is the Accusative Case governed of the Preposition *in*, which is put for *erga*.

The Preposition *in*, when it signifies an action in a place, will govern an Ablative Case; as, *spectatur in ignibus aurum*; *in ignibus* is the Ablative Case governed of the Preposition *in*.

Prepositions when they be set without their Cases, are turned into Adverbs; as, *post tempore venit*; *post* is a Preposition, but turned into an Adverb, because put without its Case.

Rule 200.

In pro erga, contra & ad.

Rule 201.

In, cum significatur actus in loco.

Rule 202.

Præpositiones cum casum amittunt.

Interjectionum Constructio.

Interjections are oftentimes put absolutely, and without a Case; as, *spem grege (ab!) filice in nuda connixa reliquit*; *ab!* is an Interjection put without a Case.

The Interjection *ô*, of exclamation, will govern a Nominative, an Accusative, and a Vocative Case; as, *ô festus dies hominibus* is the Nominative Case governed of the Interjection *ô*.

fortunatos nimium, bona si sua norint agricolas: *agricolas* is the Accusative governed of the Interjection *ô*.

formose puer, nimium ne crede colori: *formose* is the Vocative Case governed of the Interjection *ô*.

Rule 203.

Interjectiones non raro absolute, &c.

Rule 204.

O, exclamantis, Nom. Ac. & Vocativo.

O, cum Accusativo.

O, cum Vocativo.

Rule 205.
Heu & *prob*,
nunc *Nominat.*
nunc *Accus.*

The Interjections, *heu*, and *prob*, sometimes govern a Nominative, and sometimes an Accusative Case; as, *heu pietas* and *heu prisca fides*! *pietas* is the Nominative Case governed of the Interjection, *heu* and *heu stirpem invisam*! *stirpem* is the Accusative Case governed of the Interjection.

Rule 106.
Hei & *væ*
dativo *apponuntur.*

The Interjections, *hei*, and *væ*, will govern a Dative Case; as, *hei mihi*, and *nullis amor est medicabilis herbis*; *mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Interjection *hei*.

Væ misero mihi; *mihi* is the Dative Case governed of the Interjection *væ*.

Laus soli Deo.



DICTIONARIOLUM:

O R, A

Short Dictionary;

Declaring what Part of Speech any word is of,
which belongs to the Examples of the several
Rules in SYNTAXIS, with the man-
ner of Declining them.

- A** *Preposition governs an Ablat. Case.*
 ab, *Prep. governs an Ablat. Case.*
 abiere, *V. N. Com. 4. Con. abeo, is, ivi, ire, eundi, do dum; itum, tu, rus.*
 abstinuerunt, *V. A. Com. 2 Con. abstineo, es, ui, ere, di, do, dum, tentum, u, ens; rus.*
 abundas, *V. Ac. Com. 1 Con. abundo, as, avi, are, di, do, dum, tum, u, ans, rus.*
 accedere, *V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. accedo, dis, cessi ere, di, do, dum, sum, u, ens, rus.*
 actum, *first Supine, derived from the Verb ago, agis, egi, &c.*
 ad, *Prep. governs an Accus. Case.*
 ægrotat, *V. N. 1 Con. ægroto, tas, avi, are, andi, do, dum, Sup. caret, ans.*
 æqui, *N. S. 2 Decl. hoc æquum, Gen. æqui.*
 æstimo, *V. Act. 1 Con. æstimo, mas, avi, are, andi, do, dum, atum, u, ans, turus.*

Rule.

- 105, ætatem, *N. S. 3 Decl.* hæc, ætas, *Gen.* ætatis.
 121 afficio, *V. Ac. Com. 3 Con.* afficio, ficis, feci, ere
 iendi, do, dum, etum, u, rus.
 203 ah, *Interjection.*
 36, 55, alter, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom.* alter, altera, alte
 rum, *Gen.* alterius, *Voc.* caret.
 29 alium, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom.* alius, a, um, *Gen.* alius
Voc. caret.
 175 alieni, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom.* alienus, na, num. *Gen.*
 alieni, næ, ni.
 190 aliter, *Adverb of diversity.*
 13 amissus, *Part. Pret.* amissus, fa, sum, *Gen.* si, fi
 si, *from the Verb*, amitto, tis.
 22 amor, *N. S. 3 Decl.* hic amor, *Gen.* moris.
 95 amorem, *idem.*
 117, 120, amore, *idem.*
 48 animantium, *N. Ad. 3 Art.* hic, hæc, & hoc, a
 mans, *Gen.* hujus animantis.
 128 angas, *V. Ac. 3 Con.* ango, gis, xi, ere, gendi,
 dum, *Sup.* caret, gens.
 128 animi, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hic animus, *Gen.* huius
 animi.
 127 animo, *idem.*
 180 animum, *idem.*
 150 annos, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hic annus, *Gen.* huius
 anni.
 175 appetens, *N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom.* hic, hæc, & hoc
 petens, *Gen.* hujus appetentis.
 189 arbitrum, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hic arbiter, *Gen.* huius
 jus arbitri.
 168 arbutta, *N. S. 2 Decl.* hoc arbustum, *Gen.* huius
 arbusti.
 111 armis, *N. S. 2 Decl. Sing.* caret. *Plur. Nom.*
 arma, *Gen.* horum armorum.
 166 attinet, *V. Imp. 2 Con.* attinet, nebat, nuit, nua
 nebit, nere.

- avis, *N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. avis, Gen. avis.*
 4 audito, *Part. Pret. Nom. auditus, ta, tum, Gen. au-*
diti, tæ, ti, from the Verb audior.
 2 audax, *N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. hic, hæc, & hoc audax,*
Gen. hujus audacis.
 1 avida, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. avidus, da, dum, Gen.*
avidi, dæ, di.
 3 audiueram, *V. Ac. 4 Con. audio, dis, ivi, ire, di, dæ,*
dum, tum, u, ens, rus.
 i audita, *Part. Pret. auditus, a, um, &c.*
 6 Augusto, *N. S. prop. 2 Decl. Nom. hic Augustus,*
Gen. Augusti, Plur. caret.
 3 auri, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc aurum, Gen. hujus*
auri, Plur. caret.
 9 authoritate, *N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hæc authoritas, Gen.*
hujus tatis.
 8 avertere, *V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. avertō, tis, ti, tere,*
tendi, do, dum, sum, fu, tens, furus.
 2 accusaris, *V. Passiv. i Con. accusor, faris, vel are,*
fatus sum vel fui, fari, tus, andus.
 8 accusas, *V. Ac. Com. i Con. accuso, fas, favi, are,*
fandi, do, dum, tum, u, ans, rus.

B

- B**accharis, *V. Dep. i Con. bacchor, charis, vel*
chare, chandi, do, dum, tum, u, chans, cha-
turus.
 bonus, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. bonus, na, num, Gen.*
ni, næ, ni.
 bonum, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc bonum, Gen. hu-*
jus boni.

C

- C**oenandum, *Gerund in dum, from the Verb cœno-*
nas, navi, & natus sum.
 cœperat, *V. Ac. 3 Con. cœpio, pis, pì, ere, piendi,*
do, dum, ptum, tu, iens, rus.
 ceciderunt, *V. Ac. 3 Con. cado, dis, cecidi, cadere,*
dendi, do, dum, sum, u, dens, rus.

*Rule.*189 cedo, *Adverb.*194 centussis, *N. 3 Decl. Nom.* hic centussis, *Gen.* huius centussis, *Abl.* centussi.75 consulo, *V. N. 3 Con.* consulo, lis, lui, ere, lendi, do, dum, tum, u, lens, turus.78 condemnabo, *V. Act. Com. 1 Con.* condemno, navi, nare, andi, do, dum, tum, u, ans.146 conductus sum, *V. Passiv. 3 Con.* conducor ceris vendere, ductus sum vel fui, duci, ductus, ducendus.157 continet, *V. Ac. Com. 2 Con.* contineo, nes, neri, di, do, dum, tentum, tu, ens, turus.158 concessi, *V. Ac. Com. 3 Con.* concedo, dis, cessi, dendi, do, dum, sum, u, ens, rus.164 convenit, *V. Imp. 4 Con.* convenit, conveniebat, venit, convenerat, conveniet, conveniri.169 conveniri, *idem.*137 causa, *N. S. 1 Decl. Nom.* hæc causa, *Gen.* huius causæ.158 Cantabrigiam, *N. S. Prop. 1 Decl. Nom.* hæc Cantabrigia, *Gen. æ, Plur.* caret.185 castrorum, *N. S. 2 Decl. Sing.* caret, *Plur. Nom.* haec castra, *Gen.* horum castrorum.48 commune, *N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom.* hic, & hæc communis & hoc commune, *Gen.* communis.86 componere, *V. Ac. Com. 3 Con.* compono, nis, ere, endi, do, dum, situm, u, nens, rus.87 comparo, *V. Ac. Com. 1 Con.* comparo, ras, rare, di, do, dum, atum, u, rans, turus.88 comparatur, *V. Passiv. 1 Con.* comparor, raris rare, ratus sum vel fui, rari, tus, dus,93 committere, *V. Ac. Com. 3 Con.* committo, tis, tere, tendi, sum, fu, tens, surus.38 cujum, *N. Ad. Interrog. Nom.* cuius, ja, jum.40 cuius, *Pron. Relat. Nom.* qui, quæ, quod, *Gen.* ius.102 cui, *idem.*

Rule.

- 92 cuique, *Pron. Com. Nom.* quique, quæque, quodque,
Gen. cujusque.
 77 crimine, *N. S.* 3 *Decl. Nom.* hoc crimen, *Gen.* hu-
 jus criminis.

D

- 2 **D**Amnastis, *V. Ac.* 1 *Con.* damno, nas, navi, re,
 nandi, do, dum, natum, tu, nans, damnatu-
 rus.
 103 Dabo, *V. Ac.* 1 *Con.* do, das, dedi, dare, dandi,
 dando, dum, datum, u, dans, daturus.
 61, 62, desiderio, *N. S.* 2 *Decl. Nom.* hoc desiderium,
Gen. hujus desiderii.
 89 dedit, *the same with* dabo, *Rule* 103.
 108 deum, *N. S.* 2 *Decl. Nom.* hic deus. *Gen.* hujus
 dei, *Voc.* ô deus.
 16 denos, *N. Ad.* 3 *Term. Sing.* caret, *Plur. Nom.* deni,
 æ, a, *Gen.* denorum, &c.
 27 Diana, *N. S. Prop.* 1 *Decl. Nom.* hæc Diana, *Gen.*
 æ, *Plur.* caret.
 41 digitorum, *N. S.* 2 *Decl. Nom.* hic digitus, *Gen.*
 hujus digiti.
 37 divitiarum, *N. S.* 1 *Decl. Sing.* caret, *Plur.* hæ di-
 vitiae, *Gen.* harum divitiarum.
 56 diversum, *N. Ad.* 3 *Term. Nom.* diversus, sa, um,
Gen. diversi, sæ, fi.
 59 dignus, *N. Ad.* 3 *Term. Nom.* dignus, na, num, *Gen.*
 digni, dignæ, digni.
 60 digna, *idem.* dignus, nior, nissimus.
 24 discede, *V. Ac. Com.* 3 *Con.* discedo, dis, cessi, dere,
 dendi, do, dum, sum, u, dens, surus.
 35 dignitate, *N. S.* 3 *Decl. Nom.* hæc dignitas, *Gen.*
 hujus tatis.
 40 discedendo, *Gerund in do, from the Verb* discedo, dis,
 cessi

Rule.

- 271 discumbitur, *V. Imper. Passiv. 3 Conjugat.* discumbitur bebatur cubitum est vel fuit cubitum erat vel fuerat cumbetur cumberi.
- 195 dispicit, *V. Ac. Com. 3 Con.* dispicio is exi ere endo dum spectum u ens rus.
- 204 dies, *N. S. 5 Decl. Nom.* hic vel hæc dies *Gen.* huius diei *Plur.* hi dies.
- 23 domus, *N. S. 2 and 4 Decl. Nom.* hæc domus *Gen.* domi & domus.
- 154, 155, domi, *idem.*
- 161 domo, *idem.*
- 42 doctissimus, *N. Ad. 3 Term.* doctissimus ma mæ *Gen.* doctissimi mæ mi.
- 44 doctior, *N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom.* hic & hæc doctior hoc doctius *Gen.* doctioris.
- 90 dono, *V. Ac. 1 Con.* dono as avi are nandi do datum u nans natus.

E

- 212 **E** Brietate, *N. S. 3 Decl. Nom.* hæc ebrietas *Gen.* huius ebrietatis *Plur.* caret.
- 180 Eloquentiæ, *N. S. 1 Decl. Nom.* hæc eloquentia *Gen.* eloquentiæ *Plur.* caret.
- 213 emerim, *V. Ac. 3 Con.* emo mis mi mere endidum emptum u ens pturus.
- 5 emollit, *V. Ac. Com. 4 Con.* emollio lis ivi ire lidum u ens turus.
- 170, 180, an, *Adverb of shewing and upbraiding.*
- 115 eris, *V. Neut. Irreg.* sum es fui esse futurus.
- 68 esse, *idem.*
- 14, 9, Ec. est, *idem.*
- 193, 196, Et, *Conjugation Cop.*
- 161 exiit, *V. N. Com. 4 Con.* exeo is ivi ire eundidum tum u iens turus.

Rule.

103 exitio, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hoc exitium *Gen.* hujus exitii.

174 exorandus, *Part. Fut. in dus Nom.* exorandus da dum *Gen.* di dæ di.

88, 167, eum, *Pron. & Prim. Nom.* is ea id *Gen.* ejus *Voc.* caret.

F

48 **F**acile, *N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom.* hic hæc facilis & hoc le *Gen.* hujus facilis.

53 faciam, *V. Ac. 3 Con.* facio cis feci facere ciendi do dum factum u ens urus.

54 fœcundissimus, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom.* fœcundissimus-
ma mum *Gen.* mi mæ mi.

3 fertur, *V. Passiv. Irreg.* feror ferris vel ferre latus sum
vel fui ri latus ferendus.

28 fide, *N. S. 5 Decl. Nom.* hæc fides *Gen.* hujus fidei
Plur. caret.

1 fidei, *idem.*

2 fit, *V. N. Pass.* fio sis factus sum vel fui fieri factus
faciendus.

5 fieri, *idem.*

4 flocci, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hic floccus *Gen.* hujus
flocci.

1 fortior, *N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom.* hic & hæc fortior &
hoc tius *Gen.* fortioris.

2 foro, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hoc forum *Gen.* fori *Plur.*
Nom. fora *Ac.* fora *V.* fora.

9, 132, furti, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hoc furtum *Gen.*
hujus furti.

9 fungantur, *V. Dep. 3 Con.* fungor geris vel ere fun-
ctus sum vel fui fungi gendi; do dum functum
u gens cturus.

Rule.

104 fugio, *V. Ac. 3 Con.* fugio gis gi gere gendi gitum
tu gens giturus.

G

- 121 **G** Audio, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hoc gaudium *Gen.*
hujus gaudii.
144 generandi, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom.* generandus da dum
Gen. generandi dæ di.
49 gloriā, *N. S. 1 Decl. Nom.* hæc gloria *Gen.* hujus
gloriæ.
181 gentium, *N. S. 3 Decl. Nom.* hæc gens *Gen.* hujus
gentis.

H

- 206 **H** E I, *Interjection.*
34 **H** Hercule, *N. S. Prop. 3 Decl. Nom.* hic Her-
cules *Gen.* hujus Herculis *Plur.* caret.
205 Heu, *Interjection.*
130 his, *Pron. Art. Prim. Nom.* hic hæc hoc *Gen.* hujus
87 Homero, *N. S. Prop. 2 Decl. Nom.* hic Homerus
Gen. hujus Homeri *Plur.* caret.
107 hominem, *N. S. 3 Decl. Nom.* hic & hæc homo *Gen.*
hujus hominis.
149 horis, *N. S. 1 Decl. Nom.* hæc hora *Gen.* hujus horæ
33 horum *Pron. Art. Prim. Nom.* hic hæc hoc *Gen.* hu-
jus.
56, 70, huic, *idem.*
47, 73, hujus, *idem.*
170 hostibus, *N. S. 3 Decl. Nom.* hic & hæc hostis *Gen.*
hostis.

I

- ale.
 52 **I** B O, *V. Neut.* 4 *Con.* eo is ivi ire eundi do dum
 itum u iturus.
 55, 191, illo, *Pron. Prim. Nom.* ille illa illud *Gen.*
 illius.
 59 illorum, *idem.*
 86 illi, *idem.*
 92 imperat, *V. Ac. Com.* 1 *Con.* impero ras ravi rare
 randi ratum u rans aturus.
 100, 201, in, *Preposition* governs sometimes an *Accusative*,
 and sometimes an *Ablative Case.*
 132 ingenii, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hoc ingenium *Gen.* hu-
 jus ingenii.
 176 incusat, *V. Ac. Com.* 1 *Con.* incuso sas avi sare sandi
 do dum tum u ans turus.
 180 induo, *V. Ac.* 3 *Con.* induo is ui ěre endi do dum
 dutum u ens turus.
 182 inter, *Preposition* governs an *Accusative Case.*
 182 interest, *V. Imp.* interest interebat fuit fuerat erit
 interesse.
 184, 185, instar, *A Verb of likeness.*
 184 ipsius, *Pron. Prim. Nom.* ipse ipsa sum *Gen.* ipsius.
 189 ipso, *idem.*
 191 ignibus, *N. S. 3 Decl. Nom.* hic ignis *Gen.* hujus
 ignis.
 195 irritamenta, *N. S. Decl. Nom.* hoc irritamentum *Gen.*
 hujus ti.
 197 ira, *N. S. 2 Decl. Nom.* hæc ira *Gen.* hujus iræ.
 198 Italia, *N. S. Prop. 1 Decl. Nom.* hæc Italia *Gen.* hujus
 Italiæ.
 197 justus, *N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom.* justus justa justum *Gen.*
 ti tæ ti.
 195, 134, juvat, *V. Imp.* juvat juvabat juvit juverat ju-
 vabit juvare.

168 juvant,

Rule.

168 juvant, V. Ac. 1 Con. juvo vas juvi vare vandi
tum u vans vaturus.

L

118 **L** Actis, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hoc lac. Gen huius
lactis Plur. caret.

196 lactasses, V. Ac. 1 Con. lacto lactas avi are tanc
tum u tans ctaturus.

53. latas, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. latus ta tum Gen la
tæ ti.

52 latus, idem.

38 laniorum, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hic lanus Gen huius
lanii.

130 laudatur, V. Passiv. 1 Con. laudor daris vel lauda
tus sum vel fui dari atus andus.

17 loci, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hic locus Gen. ci Plur
Nom. hi loci & hæc loca.

197 loco, idem.

41 longissimus, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. longissimus
mum.

51 longus, idem longus ga gum.

M

162 **M** Agistratus, N. S. 4 Decl. Nom. hic magistrat
Gen. huius magistratus.

163. magni, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. magnus na num Ge
magni næ ni.

98 Majoribus, N. S. 3 Decl. Sing. caret Plur. Nom.
maiores Gen. horum majorum.

66 mandavit. V. Ac. 1 Con. mando das davi dare da
tum u ans aturus.

69 Mælibei, N. S. Prop. 2 Decl. Nom. hic Mælibei
Gen. bei Plur. caret.

50 memorande, Part. in dus Nom. memorandus da da
Gen. di dæ dii.

31 meminere

- 81 meminere, V. Defec. Indic. meminī meminera-
 Imper. memento Plur. mementote. Potent. me-
 minerim nissē minero. Infinit. meminisse.
 85 me, Pron. Prim. Nom. ego Gen. mei Voc. caret.
 89 meus, Pron. Deriv. Non. meus a. um Gen. mei æ i.
 90 meus, idem.
 95 meæ, idem.
 100 meum, idem.
 101 manuum, N. S. 4 Decl. Nom. hæc manus Gen. hu-
 jus manus.
 104 mentiri, V. Dep. 4 Con. mentiror iris vel ire itus
 sum vel fui iri; tiendi do dum itum u iens titu-
 rus.
 104 melle, N. Subst. 3 Decl. Nom. hoc mel Gen. hujus
 mellis, Plur. Nom. hæc mellā Ac. hæc mella V.
 6 mella.
 104 mellis, idem.
 102 meritis es, V. Dep. 2 Con. mereor reris vel rere
 meritis sum vel fui reri ritus rendus.
 103, &c. mihi, Pron. Prim. Nom. ego Gen. mei
 106 minatus est, V. Dep. 1 Con. minor aris vel are atus
 sum vel fui ari; di dō dum tum u ans turus.
 104 morari, V. Dep. 1 Con. moror raris vel rare ratus
 sum vel fui rari; di tum u rus.
 104 montis, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hic mons Gen. hujus
 montis.
 109, 123, multis, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. multus ta tum
 Gen. ti tæ ti.
 109 multo, idem.
 108 modis, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hic modus Gen. hujus
 modi.
 109 minimo, N. Ad. 3 Term. minimus ma mum Gen.
 minimi mæ mi.

N

Rule.

- 49 **N**atus, N. Ad. or rather Part. of the Pret. Nom.
natus ta tum Gen. ti tæ ti.
- 126 natus est, V. Dep. 3 Con. nascor ceris vel cere
tus sum vel fui ci; di tum.
- 102 nautas, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. hic nauta Gen. tæ.
30 nobis, Pron. Prim. Nom. ego Gen. mei.
- 31 novitatis, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hæc novitas G
tatis Plur. caret.
- 68 nos, Pron. Prim. Nom. ego Gen. mei.
- 22 nummi, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hic nummus Gen.
jus nummi.
- 35 nulli, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. nullus la lum G
nullius Voc. caret.
- 156 nutritus, Part. Pret. Nom. nutritus ta tum Gen.
tæ ti from the V. nutrior.

O

- 94 **O**btemperat, V. Ac. Com. 1 Con. obtempe
ras avi are andi tum u ans turus.
- 186 obviam, Adverb.
- 59 odio, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc odium Gen. h
odii.
- 71 officium, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc officium G
hujus officii.
- 119 officiis, idem.
- 81 omnia, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. hic & hæc omnia
hoc omne Gen. omnis Voc. caret.
- 13, 25, opes, N. S. 3 Decl. Sing. caret Plur. Nom.
opes Gen harum opum.
- 29 opes, N. S. 3 Decl. hoc opus Gen. operis.
- 30 opus, N. Ad. invariabile.
- 60 operis, idem as Rule 29.

9 Oremus, V. Ac. 1 Con. oro ras ravi rare di tum
u rans raturus.

3 orandum, Ger. in dum from the Verb oro ras ravi.

P

6 Partim, Adverb.

1 pars, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hæc pars Gen. hujus
partis.

3 paterna, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. paternus na num
Gen. ni næ ni.

4 pater, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hic pater Gen. hujus
patris.

6 paululum, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. paululus la lum
Gen. li læ li.

7 par, N. Ad. 3 Art. Nom. hic hæc & hoc par Gen.
hujus paris.

7 pallidus, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. pallidus da dum
Gen. di dæ di.

8 pallida, idem.

6 parvis, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. parvus va vum Gen.
vi væ vi; parvus minor minimus.

4 patri, the same as pater Rule 24.

6 parentes, N. Subst. 3 Decl. Nom. hic & hæc parens
Gen. parentis.

2 pateat, V. N. 2 Con. pateo tes tui & passus sum
vel fui tere tendi ens.

3 palmas, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc palma Gen. hujus
palmæ.

8 parentibus, the same with parentes 136.

pecuniæ, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc pecunia Gen.
hujus pecuniæ.

3 pessimus, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. pessimus mæ mum
Gen. mi mæ mi.

4 pedes, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hic pes Gen. pedis.

4 pedibus, idem.

pedum

Rule.

- 33 pedum, idem.
 74 pendo, dis pependi dere pendendi do dum fum
 dens furus V. Ac. 3 Con.
 104 percontatorem, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hic percontato
 Gen. hujus percontatoris.
 124 peritis, N. Ad. 3 Term. Non. peritus ta tum Ge
 periti tæ ti.
 176 perosa, N. Ad. Term. Nom. perosus fa sum Ge
 perosi fæ fi.
 177 perosi, idem.
 205 pietas, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hæc pietas Gen. pietat
 72 plurimi, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. plurimus ma ma
 Gen. plurimi mæ mi.
 192 plus, Adverb.
 194 pluris, N. Dip. Nom. hoc plus Gen. hujus plur
 Dat. Ac. Voc. Abl. caret. Plur. hi & hæ plures
 hæ plura.
 193 Platonem, N. S. Prop. 3 Decl. Nom. hic Plato Ge
 Platonis Plur. caret.
 20 potuit, V. N. Com. irreg possum potes potui po
 potens.
 42 poetarum, N. S. 1 Decl. Nom. hic poeta Gen. h
 jus poetæ.
 82 potiti sunt, V. Dep. 4 Con. potior tiris vel re ti
 sum vel fui tiri; di tum turus.
 167 pœniteret, V. Imp. 2 Con. pœnitet tebat nit
 tuerat pœnitebit pœnitere.
 202 post, Prep. turned into an Adverb.
 108 posse, V. Ac. 3 Con. posco scis poposci cere ce
 Sup. caret poscens.
 34, 64, primus, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. primus ma m
 Gen. primi mæ mi.
 76 probri, N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc probrum Gen.
 jus probri.
 91 promitto, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. promitto tis m
 mittere tendi sum su tens furus.

- 8 præluxi, V. N. Com. 2 Con. præluceo ces luxi lu-
cere di etum ens lucturus.
- 9 præstat, V. N. Com. 1 Con. præsto tas titi stare di
tum tu tans turus.
- 5 præstaret, idem.
- 10 prosequor, V. Dep. 3 Con. prosequor queris vel ere-
cutus sum vel fui equi; do tum.
- 3 præceptore, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hic præceptor Gen.
hujus præceptoris.
- 10 profectus esses, V. Dep. 3 Con. proficifor ficifceris
vel ciscere profectus sum vel fui cisci; di etum
cens eturus
- 8 prognatus, N. Ad. 3 Term. (or part) Nom. prognatus
ta tum Gen. prognati tæ ti.
- 9 Priamus, N. S. Prop. Nom. hic Priamus Gen. hujus
Priami Plur. caret.
- 8, 191, propius, Adverb.
- 6 produceres, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. produco eis duxi
cere cendi etum u cens eturus.
- 3 purgatu, later Supine from the Verb purgo purgas
purgavi.
- 9 pugnantur, V. Imp. Passiv. pugnatur pugnabatur na-
tum est vel fuit pugnatum erat vel fuerat pug-
nabitur.

Q

- &c. **Q**UI, Pron. Relat. Nom. qui quæ quod
Gen. cujus Voc. caret.
- quæ, idem.
- quod, idem.
- quarum, idem.
- quanto, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. quantus ta tum Gen.
quanti ti tæ.
- quæ, Conjun. Cop.

R

Rule.

- 12 **R** Ara, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. rarus ra rum Ge
rari ræ ri.
- 7 rediisse, V. N. Com. 4 Con. redeo dis divi dire
undi itum u diens diturus.
- 8 rediisti, idem.
- 9 redintegratio, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hæc redintegra
Gen. hujus tionis.
- 79 rerum, N. S. 5 Decl. Nom. hæc res Gen. hujus
- 81 reminiscitur, V. Dep. 3 Con. reminiscor ceris
cere recordatus sum vel fui ci; cendi recordat
cens turus.
- 84 respondet, V. Ac. Com. 2 Con. respondeo des sp
di ēre dendi sum dens.
- 97 reipub. N. S. 5 Decl. Nom. hæc respublica Gen.
jus reipublicæ.
- 114 redime, V. Ac. Com. 3 Con. redimo mis emi
mere dimendi do dum demptum tu dimens des
turus.
- 150 regnabitur, V. Imp. Pass. regnatur regnabatur na
est vel fuit, erat vel fuerat, regnabitur.
- 163 refert, V. Imp. refert referebat retulit lerat refe
- 153 Romæ, N. S. Prop. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc Roma Q
hujus Romæ Plur. caret.
- 160 Româ, idem.
- 177 Romanis, N. Ad. 3 Term. Nom. Romanus na
or N. S. 2 Decl. Nom. Romanus ni.
- 157 ruri, N. S. 3 Decl. Nom. hoc rus Gen. hujus
- 159 rus, idem.

S

- 79 **S** Atagit, V. Neut. Com. 3 Con. satago gi
agere di Sup. caret satagens.
- 149 sapit, V. Neut. 3 Con. sapio pis sapui & sapi
endi Sup. caret sapiens.

- 3 satis, Adverb Quant.
 5 secundus, N. Adject. 3 Term. Nom. secundus da dum
 Gen. secundi dæ di.
 3 feritur, V. Imp. Pass. feritur feribatur feritum est
 vel fuit erat vel fuerat feretur.
 7 senectutis, N. Subst. 3 Decl. Nom. hæc senectus
 Gen. tutis Plur. caret.
 2 signorum, N. Subst. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc signum Gen.
 hujus signi.
 7 sonat, V. Act. 1 Con. sono as nui nare di do dum
 nitum tu nans niturus.
 5 spectatum, first Sup. from the Verb spectro tas.
 5 studetis, V. Neut. 2 Con. studeo des dui dere dendi
 Sup. caret. dens.
 8 studium, Nom. Sub. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc studium Gen.
 hujus studii.
 2 statur, V. Imp. Pass. statur stabatur statum est vel
 fuit statum erat vel fuerat stabitur.
 5 stat, V. Neut. 1 Con. sto steti stare standi tum tu
 stans staturus.
 10 succurro, V. Neut. Com. 3 Con. succurro ris ri rere
 rendi sum u rens rus.
 2 suppetit, V. Act. Com. 3 Con. suppeto tis tii & tivi
 petere endi tum u ens turus.
 2 sebegit, V. Neut. Com. 3 Con. subigo gis egi gere
 di actum u gens acturus.
 6 segnitiam, Nom. Subst. 5 Decl. Nom. hæc segnitias
 Gen. hujus segnitiei Plur. caret.

T

- T**ardat, V. Act. 1 Con. tardo das davi dare dandi
 datum u dans daturus.
 3 tanti, N. Adj. 3 Term. tantus ta tum Gen. tanti tæ ti.
 10 tædet, V. Imp. tædet debat duit & pertæsum est vel
 fuit duerat & pretæsum erat vel fuerat tædebit.
 7 te, Pron. Prim. Nom. tu Gen. tui Voc. â tu.
 3 terra, N. Sub. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc terra Gen. hujus
 terræ.

Rule.

- 113 teruncio, N. Subst. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc teruncium
Gen. hujus teruncii.
- 141 tegendo, Ger. in do from the Verb tego.
- 173 tendens, Part. Pres. Nom. hic hæc & hoc tendens
Gen. tendentis from the Verb tendo.
- 182 temporis, N. Subst. 3 Decl. Nom. hoc tempus Gen.
hujus temporis.
- 187 tempori, idem.
- 45 tanto, N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. tantus ta tum Gen.
tanti tæ ti.
- 200 Teucros, N. Subst. 2 Decl. Nom. hic Teucrus Gen.
hujus Teucri.
- 152 Thebis, N. Subst. Prop. 1 Decl. Sing. caret Pl.
Nom. hæ Thebæ Gen. harum Thebarum.
- 90 tibi Pron. Prim. Nom. tu Gen. tui Voc. ô tu.
- 61 tui, idem.
- 48 tuis, Pron. Possess. Nom. tuus a um. Gen. i æ i.
- 62 tuo, idem.
- 110 tunica, N. Subst. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc tunica Gen. hujus tunicæ.
- 182 tunc, Adverb of Time.
- 138 tueri, V. Depon. 2 Con. tueor eris vel ere tuitus
vel fui eri; di tutum & tuitum u ens turus & iturus.
- V
- 116 **V** Alebant, V. Neut. 2 Con. valeo es ui ere len-
itum u ens iturus.
- 133 vapulabis, V. Neut. Passiv. 1 Con. vapulo las la-
sum vel fui are di atum ans.
- 146 vapulatum, first sup. from the same Verb.
- 181 ubi, Adverb of Place.
- 63 vestrum, Pron. Prim. Nom. tu Gen. tui Voc. ô tu.
- 93 venis, N. Subst. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc vena Gen. hujus
venæ.
- 108 veniam, N. Subst. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc venia Gen.
jus veniæ.
- 145 veniunt, V. Neut. 4 Con. venio nis ni ire iendit
u iens turus.
- 152 versatur, V. Passiv. 1 Con. versor faris vel sare
sum vel fui ari tus.

- venit, the same with veniunt Rule 145.
 vehicula, N. Subst. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc vehiculum
 Gen. hujus vehiculi.
 via N. Subst. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc via Gen. viæ.
 virorum, N. Subst. 2 Decl. Nom. hic vir Gen. hu-
 jus viri.
 viris, idem.
 villius, N. Adj. 3 Art. Nom. hic & hoc villior & hoc
 villius Gen. hujus villioris.
 videri, V. Dep. 2 Con. videor eris vel ere visus sum
 vel fui deri; di sum dens.
 vivebat, V. Neut. 3 Con. vivo vis xi vere di sum
 ens turus.
 vivere, idem.
 vita, Nom. Sub. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc vita Gen. vitæ.
 videndi, Gerund in di from the Verb video es.
 unusquisque, N. Disj. Com. Nom. unusquisque una-
 quæque unumquodque Gen. uniuscujusque.
 unum, N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. unus na num Gen.
 unius.
 vos, Pron. Prim. Nom. tu Gen. tui Voc. ô tu.
 vobis, idem.
 votis, N. Subst. 2 Decl. Nom. hoc votum Gen. hu-
 jus voti.
 urbi, N. Sub. 3 Decl. Nom. hæc urbs Gen. hujus
 urbis.
 urbem, idem.
 utrum, N. Adj. 3 Term. Nom. uter tra trum Gen.
 utrius.
 utroque, idem adding *que* to each Term.
 utrique, idem.
 ulnas, N. Sub. 1 Decl. Nom. hæc ulna Gen. hujus
 ulnæ.
 viximus, the same with vivebat Rule 105.

X

- X** Enophontem, N. Sub. Prop. 3 Decl. Nom. hic
 Xenophon Gen. hujus Xenophontis Plur. car.
The

The Rule of Construing.

I. **S** E E K out the principal Verb, then take the V
tive Case, or whatsoever is instead of it, or h
upon it serving to make it plain.

II. The Nominative Case of the principal Verb
whatsoever is instead of it, or depends upon it, to ma
plain.

Then the principal Verb, and whatsoever depend
it, serving to expound it, as an Adverb, or an Infir
Mood.

IV. Lastly, the Case which the Verb properly gov
and all the other Cases after it in order. As first, the
nitive, then the Dative, afterwards the Ablative.
Substantive and the Adjective must be construed toge
except the Adjective do govern some other Word, or
some Word joined to it, to which it passeth the Signi
fication, and the Preposition must be joined with his Case.

Yet this Order is often altered by Interrogatives,
tives, certain Adverbs, and Conjunctions. *Lud. Li*
Pag. 99. *Et Praxis Mri. Leech*, Pag. 24.

F I N I S.

